For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

INTRODUCTION TO ISLAM



Mega Lecture

Dr Muhammad Hamidullah

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

DOWNLOAD

CSS Notes, Books, MCQs, Magazines



WWW.THECSSPOINT.COM

MegaLecture

- **Download CSS Notes**
- **Download CSS Books**
- **Download CSS Magazines**
- **Download CSS MCQs**
- **Download CSS Past Papers**

The CSS Point, Pakistan's The Best Online FREE Web source for All CSS Aspirants.

Email: info@thecsspoint.com

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Chapter 1 ... The Prophet of Islam -- His Biography 02

Chapter 2 ... Preservation of the Original Teachings of Islam 13

Chapter 3 ... The Islamic Conception of Life 27

Chapter 4 ... Faith and Belief 38

Chapter 5 ... Devotional Life and Religious Practices in Islam 48

Chapter 6 ... The Cultivation of Spiritual Life 60

Chapter 7 ... The System of Morality in Islam 68

Chapter 8 ... The Political System of Islam 77

Chapter 9 ... The Judicial System of Islam 87

Chapter 10 ... The Economic System of Islam 99

Chapter 11 ... The Muslim Woman 110

Chapter 12 ... The Status of non-Muslims in Islam 120

Chapter 13 ... Muslim Contribution to the Sciences and Arts 129

Chapter 14 ... General History of Islam 141

Chapter 15 ... Daily Life of a Muslim 150

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Chapter No: 01

The Prophet of Islam -- His Biography

In the annals of men, individuals have not been lacking who conspicuously devoted their lives to the socio-religious reform of their connected peoples. We find them in every epoch and in all lands. In India, there lived those who transmitted to the world the Vedas, and there was also the great Gautama Buddha; China had its Confucius; the Avesta was produced in Iran. Babylon gave to the world one of the greatest reformers, the Prophet Abraham (not to mention those of his ancestors like Enoch and Noah of whom we have very scant information). The Jewish people may rightly be proud of a long series of reformers: Moses, Samuel, David, Solomon, and Jesus among others.

2. Two points are noteworthy: First these reformers claimed in general to be the bearers each of a Divine mission, and they left behind them sacred books incorporating codes of life for the guidance of their peoples. Second there followed fratricidal wars, and massacres and genocide became the order of the day, causing more or less a complete loss of these Divine messages. As to the books of Abraham, we know them only by the name; and as for the books of Moses, records tell us how they were repeatedly destroyed and only partly restored.

Concept of God

3. If one should judge from the relics of the past already brought to light of *homo sapiens*, one will find that man has always been conscious of the existence of a Supreme Being, Master and Creator of all. Methods and approaches may differ, but the people of every epoch have left proofs of their attempts to obey God. Communication with the Omnipresent yet invisible God has also been recognized as possible in connection with a small fraction of men with noble and exalted spirits. Whether this communication assumes the nature of an incarnation of the Divinity or simply resolves itself into a medium of reception of Divine messages (through inspiration or revelation), the purpose in each case is the guidance of the people. It is natural that the interpretations and explanations of certain systems should have proved more vital and convincing than others.

3/a. Every system of metaphysical thought develops its own terminology. In the course of time, terms acquire a significance hardly contained in the word and translations fall short of their purpose. Yet there is no other method to make people of one group understand the thoughts of another. Non-Muslim readers in particular are requested to bear in mind this aspect which is a real yet unavoidable handicap.

4. By the end of the 6th century, after the birth of Jesus Christ, men had already made great progress in diverse walks of life. At that time there were some religions which openly proclaimed that they were reserved for definite races and groups of men only, of course they bore no remedy for the ills of humanity at large. There were also a few which claimed universality, but

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

declared that the salvation of man lay in the renunciation of the world. These were the religions for the elite, and catered to an extremely limited number of men. We need not speak of regions where no religion existed at all; where atheism and materialism reigned supreme; where one's thought was solely of occupying the self with one's own pleasures, without any regard or consideration for the rights of others.

Arabia

5. A perusal of the map of the major hemisphere (from the point of view of the proportion of land to sea), shows the Arabian Peninsula lying at the confluence of the three great continents of Asia, Africa and Europe. At the time in question, this extensive Arabian subcontinent, composed mostly of desert areas, was inhabited by people of settled habitations as well as nomads. Often it was found that members of the same tribe were divided into these two groups, and that they preserved a relationship although following different modes of life. In Arabia, the means of subsistence were meagre. The desert had its handicaps, and trade caravans were of greater importance than either agriculture or industry. This entailed much travel, and men had to proceed beyond the peninsula to Syria, Egypt, Abyssinia, Iraq, Sind, India and other lands.

6. We do not know much about the Libyanites of Central Arabia, but Yemen was rightly called *Arabia Felix*. Having once been the seat of the flourishing civilizations of Sheba and Ma'in even before the foundation of the city of Rome had been laid, and having later snatched from the Byzantians and Persians several provinces, greater Yemen which had passed through the hey-day of its existence, an was at this time broken up into innumerable principalities (and even occupied in part by foreign invaders). The Sassanians of Iran, who had penetrated into Yemen had already obtained possession of Eastern Arabia. There was socio-politico chaos at the capital (Mada'in = Ctesiphon), and this found reflection in all her territories. Northern Arabia had succumbed to Byzantine influences and was faced with its own particular problems. Only Central Arabia remained immune from the demoralizing effects of foreign occupation.

7. In this limited area of Central Arabia, the existence of the triangle of Mecca-Ta'if-Madinah seemed something providential. Mecca, a desert, deprived of water and the amenities of agriculture in physical features represented Africa and the burning Sahara. Scarcely fifty miles from there, Ta'if presented a picture of Europe and its frost. Madinah in the North was not less fertile than even the most temperate of Asiatic countries like Syria. If climate has any influence on human character, this triangle standing in the middle of the major hemisphere was, more than any other region of the earth, a miniature reproduction of the entire world. And here was born a descendant of the Babylonian Abraham, and the Egyptian Hagar, Muhammad the Prophet of Islam, a Meccan by origin and yet with stock related, both to Madinah and Ta'if.

Religion

8. From the point of view of religion, Arabia was idolatrous for only a few individuals had embraced religions like Christianity, Mazdaism, etc. The Meccans possessed the notion of One God, but they also believed that idols had the power to intercede with Him. Curiously enough,

Mega Lecture

they did not believe in the Resurrection and Afterlife. They had preserved the rite of the pilgrimage to the House of the One God, the Ka'bah, an institution set up under divine inspiration by their ancestor Abraham, yet the two thousand years that separated them from Abraham had caused to degenerate this pilgrimage into the spectacle of a commercial fair and an occasion of senseless idolatry which far from producing any good, only served to ruin their individual behaviour, both social and spiritual.

Society

9. In spite of the comparative poverty in natural resources, Mecca was the most developed of the three points of the triangle. Of the three, Mecca alone had a city-state and was governed by a council of ten hereditary chiefs who enjoyed a clear division of power. (There was a minister of foreign relations, a minister guardian of the temple, a minister of oracles, a minister guardian of offerings to the temple, one to determine the torts and the damages payable, another in charge of the municipal council or parliament to enforce the decisions of the ministries. There were also ministers in charge of military affairs like custodianship of the flag, leadership of the cavalry etc.). As well reputed caravan-leaders, the Meccans were able to obtain permission from neighbouring empires like Iran, Byzantium and Abyssinia - and to enter into agreements with the tribes that lined the routes traversed by the caravans - to visit their countries and transact import and export business. They also provided escorts to foreigners when they passed through their country as well as the territory of allied tribes, in Arabia (cf. Ibn Habib, *Muhabbar*). Although not much interested in the preservation of ideas and records in writing, they passionately cultivated arts and letters like poetry, oratory discourses and folk tales. Women were generally well treated, they enjoyed the privilege of possessing property in their own right, they gave their consent to marriage contracts, in which they could even add the condition of reserving their right to divorce their husbands. They could remarry when widowed or divorced. Burying girls alive did exist among certain classes, but that was rare.

Birth of the Prophet

10. It was in the midst of such conditions and environments that Muhammad was born in 569 after Christ. His father, 'Abdullah had died some weeks earlier, and it was his grandfather who took charge of him. According to the prevailing custom, the child was entrusted to a Bedouin foster-mother, with whom he passed several years in the desert. All biographers state that the infant prophet sucked only one breast of his foster-mother, leaving the other for the sustenance of his foster-brother. When the child was brought back home, his mother, Aminah, took him to his maternal uncles at Madinah to visit the tomb of 'Abdullah. During the return journey, he lost his mother who died a sudden death. At Mecca, another bereavement awaited him, in the death of his affectionate grandfather. Subjected to such privations, he was at the age of eight, consigned at last to the care of his uncle, Abu-Talib, a man who was generous of nature but always short of resources and hardly able to provide for his family.

11. Young Muhammad had therefore to start immediately to earn his livelihood; he served as a shepherd boy to some neighbours. At the age of ten he accompanied his uncle to Syria when

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

he was leading a caravan there. No other travels of Abu-Talib are mentioned, but there are references to his having set up a shop in Mecca. (Ibn Qutaibah, *Ma'arif*). It is possible that Muhammad helped him in this enterprise also.

12. By the time he was twenty-five, Muhammad had become well known in the city for the integrity of his disposition and his honest character. A rich widow, Khadijah, took him in her employ and consigned to him her goods to be taken for sale to Syria. Delighted with the unusual profits she obtained and also by the personal charms of her agent, she offered him her hand. According to divergent reports, she was either 28 or 40 years of age at that time, (medical reasons prefer the age of 28 since she gave birth to five more children). The union proved happy. Later, we see him sometimes in the fair of Hubashah (Yemen), and at least once in the country of the 'Abd al-Qais (Bahrain-Oman), as mentioned by Ibn Hanbal. There is every reason to believe that this refers to the great fair of Daba (Oman), where, according to Ibn al-Kalbi (cf. Ibn Habib, *Muhabbar*), the traders of China, of Hind and Sind (India, Pakistan), of Persia, of the East and the West assembled every year, travelling both by land and sea. There is also mention of a commercial partner of Muhammad at Mecca. This person, Sa'ib by name reports: "We relayed each other; if Muhammad led the caravan, he did not enter his house on his return to Mecca without clearing accounts with me; and if I led the caravan, he would on my return enquire about my welfare and speak nothing about his own capital entrusted to me."

An Order of Chivalry

13. Foreign traders often brought their goods to Mecca for sale. One day a certain Yemenite (of the tribe of Zubaid) improvised a satirical poem against some Meccans who had refused to pay him the price of what he had sold, and others who had not supported his claim, or had failed to come to his help when he was victimized. Zuhair, uncle and chief of the tribe of the Prophet, felt great remorse on hearing this just satire. He called for a meeting of certain chieftains in the city, and organized an order of chivalry, called *Hilf al-fudul*, with the aim and object of aiding the oppressed in Mecca, irrespective of their being dwellers of the city or aliens. Young Muhammad became an enthusiastic member of the organization. Later in life he used to say: "I have participated in it, and I am not prepared to give up that privilege even against a herd of camels; if somebody should appeal to me even today, by virtue of that pledge, I shall hurry to his help."

Beginning of Religious Consciousness

14. Not much is known about the religious practices of Muhammad until he was thirty-five years old, except that he had never worshipped idols. This is substantiated by all his biographers. It may be stated that there were a few others in Mecca, who had likewise revolted against the senseless practice of paganism, although conserving their fidelity to the Ka'bah as the house dedicated to the One God by its builder Abraham.

15. About the year 605 of the Christian era, the draperies on the outer wall of the Ka'bah took fire. The building was affected and could not bear the brunt of the torrential rains that followed. The reconstruction of the Ka'bah was then undertaken. Each citizen contributed according to his

Mega Lecture

means; and only the gifts by honest gains were accepted. Everybody participated in the work of construction, and Muhammad's shoulders were injured in the course of transporting stones. To identify the place whence the ritual of circumambulation began, there had been set a black stone in the wall of the Ka'bah, dating probably from the time of Abraham himself. There was rivalry among the citizens for obtaining the honour of transposing this stone in its place. When there was danger of blood being shed, somebody suggested leaving the matter to Providence, and accepting the arbitration of him who should happen to arrive there first. It chanced that Muhammad just then turned up there for work as usual. He was popularly known by the appellation of *al-Amin* (the honest), and everyone accepted his arbitration without hesitation. Muhammad placed a sheet of cloth on the ground, put the stone on it and asked the chiefs of all the tribes in the city to lift together the cloth. Then he himself placed the stone in its proper place, in one of the angles of the building, and everybody was satisfied.

16. It is from this moment that we find Muhammad becoming more and more absorbed in spiritual meditations. Like his grandfather, he used to retire during the whole month of Ramadan to a cave in Jabal-an-Nur (mountain of light). The cave is called `Ghar-i-Hira' or the cave of research. There he prayed, meditated, and shared his meagre provisions with the travellers who happened to pass by.

Revelation

17. He was forty years old, and it was the fifth consecutive year since his annual retreats, when one night towards the end of the month of Ramadan, an angel came to visit him, and announced that God had chosen him as His messenger to all mankind. The angel taught him the mode of ablutions, the way of worshipping God and the conduct of prayer. He communicated to him the following Divine message:

With the name of God, the Most Merciful, the All-Merciful.
Read: with the name of thy Lord Who created,
Created man from what clings,
Read: and thy Lord is the Most Bounteous,
Who taught by the pen,
Taught man what he knew not. [Qur'an 96:1-5]

18. Deeply affected, he returned home and related to his wife what had happened, expressing his fears that it might have been something diabolic or the action of evil spirits. She consoled him, saying that he had always been a man of charity and generosity, helping the poor, the orphans, the widows and the needy, and assured him that God would protect him against all evil.

19. Then came a pause in revelation, extending over three years. The Prophet must have felt a shock at first, then a calm, an ardent desire, and after a period of waiting, a growing impatience or nostalgia. The news of the first vision had spread and at the pause, the sceptics in the city had begun to mock at him and cut bitter jokes. They went so far as to say that God had forsaken him.

Mega Lecture

20. During the three years of waiting, the Prophet had given himself up more and more to prayers and to spiritual practices. The revelations were then resumed and God assured him that He had not at all forsaken him. On the contrary, it was He Who had guided him to the right path, therefore he should take care of the orphans and the destitute, and proclaim the bounty of God on him (cf. Q. 93:3-11). This was in reality an order to preach. Another revelation directed him to warn people against evil practices, to exhort them to worship none but the One God, and to abandon everything that would displease God (Q. 74:2-7). Yet another revelation commanded him to warn his own near relatives (Q. 26:214), and "*Proclaim openly that which thou art commanded, and withdraw from the Associators (idolaters). Lo! We defend thee from the scoffers*" [Qur'an 15:94-5]. According to Ibn Ishaq, the first revelation (n. 17) had come to the Prophet during his sleep, evidently to reduce the shock. Later revelations came in full wakefulness.

The Mission

21. The Prophet began by preaching his mission secretly at first among his intimate friends, then among the members of his own tribe and thereafter publicly in the city and suburbs. He insisted on the belief in One Transcendent God, in Resurrection and the Last Judgement. He invited men to charity and beneficence. He took necessary steps to preserve through writing the revelations he was receiving, and ordered his adherents also to learn them by heart. This continued all through his life, since the Qur'an was not revealed all at once, but in fragments as occasions arose.

22. The number of his adherents increased gradually, but with the denunciation of paganism, the opposition also grew more intense for those who were firmly attached to their ancestral beliefs. This opposition degenerated in the course of time into physical torture of the Prophet and of those who had embraced his religion. These were stretched on burning sands, cauterized with red hot iron and imprisoned with chains on their feet. Some of them died of the effects of torture, but none would renounce his religion. In despair, the Prophet Muhammad advised his companions to quit their native town and take refuge abroad, in Abyssinia, "where governs a just ruler, in whose realm nobody is oppressed" (Ibn Hisham). Dozens of Muslims profited by his advice, though not all. These secret flights led to further persecution of those who remained behind.

23. The Prophet Muhammad called this religion "Islam," i.e. submission to the will of God. Its distinctive features are two:

(1) A harmonius equilibrium between the temporal and the spiritual (the body and the soul), permitting a full enjoyment of all the good that God has created, (Qur'an 7:32), enjoining at the same time on everybody duties towards God, such as worship, fasting, charity, etc. Islam was to be the religion of the masses and not merely of the elect.

(2) A universality of the call - all the believers becoming brothers and equals without any distinction of class or race or tongue. The only superiority which it recognizes is a personal one, based on the greater fear of God and greater piety (Qur'an 49:13).

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Social Boycott

24. When a large number of the Meccan Muslims migrated to Abyssinia, the leaders of paganism sent an ultimatum to the tribe of the Prophet demanding that he should be excommunicated and outlawed and delivered to the pagans to be put to death. Every member of the tribe, Muslim and non-Muslim, rejected the demand. (cf. Ibn Hisham). Thereupon the city decided on a complete boycott of the tribe: Nobody was to talk to them or have commercial or matrimonial relations with them. The group of Arab tribes called Ahabish, inhabiting the suburbs, who were allies of the Meccans, also joined in the boycott, causing stark misery among the innocent victims consisting of children, men and women, the old and the sick and the feeble. Some of them succumbed yet nobody would hand over the Prophet to his persecutors. However, an uncle of the Prophet, Abu Lahab, left his tribesmen and participated in the boycott along with the pagans. After three dire years, during which the victims were obliged to devour even crushed hides, four or five non-Muslims, more humane than the rest and belonging to different clans publicly proclaimed their denunciation of the unjust boycott. At the same time, the document promulgating the pact of boycott which had been hung in the temple, was found, as Muhammad had predicted, eaten by white ants, that spared nothing but the words God and Muhammad. The boycott was lifted, and owing to the privations that were undergone, the wife and Abu Talib, the chief of the tribe and uncle of the Prophet died soon after. Another uncle of the Prophet, Abu-Lahab, who was an inveterate enemy of Islam, now succeeded to the headship of the tribe. (cf. lbn Hisham, *Sirah*).

The Ascension

25. It was at this time that the Prophet Muhammad was granted the *mi'raj* (ascension): He saw in a vision that he was received in heaven by God, and was a witness to the marvels of the celestial regions. Upon his return, he brought for his community, as a Divine gift, Islamic worship, which constitutes a sort of communion between man and God. It may be recalled that in the last part of Muslim service of worship, the faithful employ as a symbol of their being in the very presence of God, not concrete objects as others do at the time of communion, but the very words of greeting exchanged between the Prophet Muhammad and God on the occasion of the former's *mi'raj*: "**The blessed and pure greetings for God! - Peace be with thee, O Prophet, as well as the mercy and blessing of God! - Peace be with us and with all the well-behaving servants of God!**" The Christian term "communion" implies participation in the Divinity. Finding it pretentious, Muslims use the term "ascension" towards God and reception in His presence, God remaining God, and man remaining man, and no confusion between the two.

26. The news of this celestial meeting led to an increase in the hostility of the pagans of Mecca.

Migration to Madinah

27. The annual pilgrimage of the Ka'bah brought people from all parts of Arabia to Mecca. The Prophet Muhammad tried to persuade one tribe after another to afford him shelter and allow him to carry on his mission of reform. The contingents of fifteen tribes, whom he approached in

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Mega Lecture

succession, refused to do so more or less brutally, but he did not despair. Finally he met half a dozen inhabitants of Madinah who being neighbours of the Jews and the Christians, had some notion of prophets and Divine messages. They knew also that these "people of the Book" were awaiting the arrival of a prophet -- a last comforter. So these Madinans decided not to lose the opportunity to obtain an advance over others, and forthwith embraced Islam, and furthermore promised to provide additional adherents and necessary help from Madinah. The following year, a dozen new Madinans took the oath of allegiance to him and requested him to provide them with a missionary teacher. The work of the missionary, Mus'ab, proved very successful and he led a contingent of seventy-three new converts to Mecca, at the time of the pilgrimage. These invited the Prophet and his Meccan companions to migrate to their town, and promised to shelter the Prophet and to treat him and his companions as their own kith and kin. Secretly and in small groups, the greater part of the Muslims emigrated to Madinah. Upon this, the pagans of Mecca not only confiscated the property of the evacuees, but devised a plot to assassinate the Prophet. It now became impossible for him to remain at home. It is noteworthy to mention that in spite of their hostility to his mission, the pagans had unbounded confidence in his uprightness and honesty, so much so that many of them used to deposit their savings with him. The Prophet Muhammad now entrusted all these deposits to 'Ali, a cousin of his, with instructions to return in due course to the rightful owners. He then left the town secretly in the company of his faithful friend, Abu-Bakr. After several adventures, they succeeded in reaching Madinah in safety. This happened in 622, whence starts the Hijrah calendar.

Reorganization of the Community

28. For the better rehabilitation of the displaced immigrants, the Prophet created a fraternization between them and an equal number of well-to-do Madinans. The families of each pair of the contractual brothers worked together to earn their livelihood, and aided one another in the business of life.

29. Further he thought that the development of the man as a whole would be better achieved if he co-ordinated religion and politics as two constituent parts of one whole. To this end he invited the representatives of the Muslims as well as the non-Muslim inhabitants of the region -- Arabs, Jews, Christians and others -- and suggested the establishment of a City-State in Madinah. With their assent, he endowed the city with a written constitution (the first of its kind in the world) in which he defined the duties and rights both of the citizens and the head of the State. The Prophet Muhammad was unanimously hailed as such, and abolished the customary private justice. Henceforward, the administration of justice became the concern of the central organization of the community of the citizens. The document laid down principles of defence and foreign policy; it organized a system of social insurance, called ma'aqil, in cases of too heavy obligations. It recognized that the Prophet Muhammad would have the final word in all differences, and that there was no limit to his power of legislation. It recognized also explicitly the liberty of religion, particularly for the Jews, to whom the constitutional act afforded equality with Muslims in all that concerned life in this world (cf. infra n. 303).

MegaLecture

30. Muhammad journeyed several times with a view to win the neighbouring tribes and to conclude with them treaties of alliance and mutual help. With their help, he decided to bring to bear economic pressure on the Meccan pagans, who had confiscated the property of the Muslim evacuees and also caused innumerable damage. Obstruction in the way of the Meccan caravans and their passage through the Madinan region exasperated the pagans, and a bloody struggle ensued.

31. In the concern for the material interests of the community, the spiritual aspect was never neglected. Hardly a year had passed after the migration to Madinah when the most rigorous of spiritual disciplines, the fasting for the whole month of Ramadan every year, was imposed on every adult Muslim man and woman.

Struggle Against Intolerance and Unbelief

32. Not content with the expulsion of the Muslim compatriots, the Meccans sent an ultimatum, to the Madinans, demanding the surrender or at least the expulsion of Muhammad and his companions but evidently all such efforts proved in vain. A few months later, in the year 2 H., they sent a powerful army against the Prophet, who opposed them at Badr, and the pagans thrice as numerous as the Muslims, were routed. After a year of preparation, the Meccans again invaded Madinah to avenge the defeat of Badr. They were now four times as numerous as the Muslims. After a bloody encounter at Uhud, the enemy retired, the issue being indecisive. The mercenaries in the Meccan army did not want to take too much risk, or endanger their safety.

33. Meanwhile the Jewish citizens of Madinah began to foment trouble. About the time of the victory of Badr, one of their leaders, Ka'b ibn al-Ashraf, proceeded to Mecca to give assurance of his alliance with the pagans, and to incite them to a war of revenge. After the battle of Uhud, the tribe of the same chieftain plotted to assassinate the Prophet by throwing on him a mill-stone from above a tower, when he had gone to visit their locality. In spite of all this, the only demand the Prophet made of the men of this tribe was to quit the Madinan region, taking with them all their possessions after selling their immovables and recovering their debts from the Muslims. The clemency thus extended had an effect contrary to what was hoped. The exiled not only contacted the Meccans, but also the tribes of the North, South and East of Madinah, mobilized military aid, and planned from Khaibar an invasion of Madinah, with forces four times more numerous than those employed at Uhud. The Muslims prepared for a siege, and dug a ditch to defend themselves against this hardest of all trials. Although the defection of the Jews still remaining inside Madinah at a later stage upset all strategy, yet with a sagacious diplomacy, the Prophet succeeded in breaking up the alliance, and the different enemy groups retired one after the other.

34. Alcoholic drinks, gambling and games of chance were at this time declared forbidden for Muslims.

The Reconciliation

Mega Lecture

35. The Prophet tried again to reconcile the Meccans and proceeded to Mecca. The barring of the route of their Northern caravans had ruined their economy. The Prophet promised them transit security, extradition of their fugitives and the fulfilment of every condition they desired, agreeing even to return to Madinah without accomplishing the pilgrimage of the Ka'bah. Thereupon the two contracting parties promised at Hudaibiyah in the suburbs of Mecca, not only the maintenance of peace, but also the observance of neutrality in their conflicts with third parties.

36. Profiting by the peace, the Prophet launched an intensive programme for the propagation of his religion. He addressed missionary letters to the foreign rulers of Byzantium, Iran, Abyssinia and other lands. The Byzantine autocrat priest, Dughatur of the Arabs, embraced Islam, but was lynched by the Christian mob for this. The prefect of Ma'an (Palestine) suffered the same fate, and was decapitated and crucified by order of the emperor. A Muslim ambassador was assassinated in Syria-Palestine, and instead of punishing the culprit, the emperor Heraclius rushed with his armies to protect him against the punitive expedition sent by the Prophet (battle of Mu'tah).

37. The pagans of Mecca hoping to profit by the Muslim difficulties, violated the terms of their treaty. Upon this, the Prophet himself led an army, ten thousand strong, and surprised Mecca to which he occupied in a bloodless manner. As a benevolent conqueror, he caused the vanquished people to assemble, reminded them of their ill deeds, their religious persecution, unjust confiscation of the evacuee property, ceaseless invasions and senseless hostilities for twenty continuous years. He asked them: "Now what do you expect of me?" When everybody lowered his head with shame, the Prophet proclaimed: "**May God pardon you. Go in peace. There shall be no responsibility on you today; you are free!**"He even renounced the claim for the Muslim property confiscated by the pagans. This produced a great psychological change of hearts instantaneously. After hearing this general amnesty, a Meccan chief advanced with a fulsome heart towards the Prophet in order to declare his acceptance of Islam and the Prophet told him: "**And in my turn, I appoint you the governor of Mecca!**" Without leaving a single soldier in the conquered city, the Prophet retired to Madinah. The Islamization of Mecca, which was accomplished in a few hours, was complete.

38. Immediately after the occupation of Mecca, the city of Ta'if mobilized to fight against the Prophet. With some difficulty the enemy was dispersed in the valley of Hunain, but the Muslims preferred to raise the siege of nearby Ta'if and use peaceful means to break the resistance of this region. Less than a year later, a delegation from Ta'if came to Madinah to offer submission, but it requested exemption from prayer, taxes and military service, and the continuance of the liberty to adultery and fornication and alcoholic drinks. It demanded even the conservation of the temple of the idol al-Lat at Ta'if. But Islam was not a materialistic immoral movement, and soon the delegation itself felt ashamed of its demands regarding prayer, adultery and wine. The Prophet consented to concede exemption from payment of taxes and rendering of military service; and added: You need not demolish the temple with your own hands for we shall send agents from here to do the job. And if there should be any consequences which you are afraid of on account of your superstitions, it will be they who would suffer. This act of the Prophet

Mega Lecture

shows what concessions could be given to new converts. The conversion of the Ta'ifites was so whole-hearted that in a short while they themselves renounced the contracted exemptions, and we find the Prophet nominating a tax collector in their locality as in other Islamic regions.

39. In all these "wars," extending over a period of ten years, the non-Muslims lost only about 250 persons on the battlefield and killed, and the Muslim losses were even less. With these few incisions, the whole continent of Arabia with its million and more square miles, was cured of the abscess of anarchy and immorality. During these ten years of disinterested struggle, all the people of the Arabian Peninsula and the southern regions of Iraq and Palestine had voluntarily embraced Islam. Some Christian, Jewish and Parsi groups, however, remained attached to their creeds and they were granted liberty of conscience as well as judicial and juridical autonomy.

40. In the year 10 H., when the Prophet went to Mecca for *Hajj* (pilgrimage), he met 140,000 Muslims there who had come from different parts of Arabia to fulfil their religious obligation. He addressed to them his celebrated sermon, in which he gave a resume of his teachings -- belief in One God without images or symbols; equality of all the Believers without distinction of race or class; the superiority of individuals being based solely on piety; sanctity of life, property and honour; abolition of interest, and of vendettas and private justice; better treatment of women; obligatory inheritance and distribution of the property of deceased persons among near relatives of both sexes, and removal of the possibility of the accumulation of wealth in the hands of the few. The Qur'an and the conduct of the Prophet were to serve as the bases of law and a healthy criterion for every aspect of human life.

41. Upon his return to Madinah, he fell ill and a few weeks later, when he breathed his last, he had the satisfaction that he had well accomplished the task which he had undertaken -- to preach to the world the Divine message.

42. He bequeathed to posterity, a religion of pure monotheism. H he created a well-disciplined State out of the existent chaos and gave peace in place of the war of everybody against everybody else. He established a harmonious equilibrium between the spiritual and the temporal, between the mosque and the citadel. He left a new system of law, which dispensed impartial justice, in which even the head of the State was as much a subject to it as any commoner, and in which religious tolerance was so great that non-Muslim inhabitants of Muslim countries equally enjoyed complete juridical, judicial and cultural autonomy.

In the matter of the revenues of the State, the Qur'an fixed the principles of budgeting, and paid more thought to the poor than to anybody else. The revenues were declared to be in no wise the private property of the head of the State. Above all, the Prophet Muhammad set a noble example and fully practised all that he taught to others.

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Chapter No: 02

The Preservation of the Original Teachings of Islam

There can be nothing in common between the true and the false and there can be no two things in the world which can be as opposed to each other as these. In the ordinary materialness of everyday life, the evils of falsehood are obvious and acknowledged by all. Of course in matters of eternal salvation, of beliefs, and of the original teachings of a religion, the evil that falsehood effectuates transcends all other evils.

44. An honest and reasonable man will not experience difficulty judging whether or not a certain teaching is just and acceptable. In matters of dogma, however, it often happens that one judges first the character of the teacher before knowing his precepts. Then, if the teacher is found trustworthy, one can more easily persuaded to acknowledge one's own defects in understanding parts of the teacher's teachings, rather than rejecting all his words outright. Particularly when the teacher has died, the authenticity of the teacher's words and teachings becomes more essential in such cases.

45. All the important religions of the world are based on certain sacred books, which are often attributed to Divine revelations. It would be pathetic if by some misfortune, one were to lose the original text of the revelation. The substitute would never be in entire conformity with what is lost. The Brahmans, Buddhists, Jews, Parsis and Christians might compare the method employed to preserve the basic teachings of their respective religions with that of the Muslims. Who wrote their books? Who transmitted them from generation to generation? Was the transmission from the original texts or merely their translations? Were not fratricidal wars caused damage to the copies of the texts? Are there no internal contradictions or gaps to which references are found elsewhere? These are some of the questions that every honest seeker of truth must pose and demand satisfactory replies.

Means of preservation

46. By the time the 'great religions' emerged, man had not only relied on his memory, but had also invented the art of writing to preserve his thoughts. Writing was more endurable than the individual memories of human beings who, after all, had a limited lifespan.

47. But neither of these two means [memory and writing] is infallible when taken separately. It is a matter of daily practice that when one writes something and then revises it, that one finds more or less inadvertent mistakes, omission of letters or even of words, repetition of statements, use of words other than those intended, grammatical mistakes, etc., not to speak of changes of

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

opinion of the writer, who also corrects his style, his thoughts, his arguments, and sometimes rewrites an entire document. The same is true of the faculty of memory. Those who have the obligation or habitude to learn by heart some text and to recite it later (especially when it involves long passages), know that sometimes their memory will fail during the recitation: they jump over passages; mix up one with the other; or do not remember the sequence; sometimes the correct text remains subconscious and is recalled later either at sometime or at the jogging of the memory at the urging of someone else or after consulting the text in a written document.

48. The Prophet of Islam, Muhammad of blessed memory, employed both methods simultaneously, each helping the other and strengthening the integrity of the text and diminishing to the minimum the possibilities of error.

Islamic teachings

49. The teachings of Islam are based primarily on what the Prophet Muhammad said or did. He himself dictated certain texts to his scribes, which we call the Qur'an, while others were compiled by his companions, mostly on their private initiative, and these we call the Hadith.

History of the Qur'an

50. '*Qur'an*' literally means 'reading' or 'recitation.' While dictating this to his disciples, the Prophet assured them that it was the Divine revelation that had come to him. He did not dictate the whole at one stretch - the revelations came to him in pieces, from time to time. As soon as he received one, he would communicate it to his disciples and ask them not only to learn it by heart, (in order to recite it during the service of worship) but also to write it down and to multiply the copies. On each occasion, he indicated the precise place of the new revelation in the text of until-then-revealed Qur'an. His was not a chronological compilation. One cannot admire too much the precaution and care taken for accuracy, if one takes into consideration the standard of the culture of the Arabs in that time.

51. It is reasonable to believe that the earliest revelations received by the Prophet were not committed to writing immediately, for the simple reason that there were then no disciples or adherents. These early portions were neither long nor numerous. There was no risk that the Prophet would forget them, since he recited them often in his prayers and proselytising talks.

52. Some historical facts give us an idea of what happened. 'Umar is considered to be the fortieth person to embrace Islam. This refers to the year five of the Mission (eight before the *Hijrah*). Even at such an early date there existed written copies of certain chapters of the Qur'an, and as Ibn Hisham reports, it was due to the profound effects produced by the perusal of such a document that 'Umar embraced Islam. We do not know precisely the time that the practice of writing down the Qur'an began, but there is little doubt that during the remaining eighteen years of the life of the Prophet, the number of the Muslims increased and so did the copies of the sacred text increase day by day. The Prophet received the revelations in fragments. Therefore, it is natural that the revealed text should mention the problems of the day.

Mega Lecture

It may be that one of his companions would die and the revelation would be to promulgate the law of inheritance. It could not be that the penal law regarding theft, murder, or drinking wine, for instance, should have been revealed at that moment. The revelations continued during the whole missionary life of Muhammad, thirteen years at Mecca and ten at Madinah. A revelation would sometimes consist of a whole chapter, short or long, and at other times of only a few verses.

53. The nature of the revelations necessitated that the Prophet should repeat them constantly to his companions and revise on a continual basis the form in which the collections of fragments had to take. It is authoritatively known that the Prophet recited every year, in the month of Ramadan, in the presence of the angel Gabriel, the portion of the Qur'an up til then revealed, and in the last year of his life, Gabriel asked him to recite the whole of it twice. The Prophet concluded thereupon that he was going soon to depart his life. Whatever the spiritual meaning of his angelic aid to the Prophet, his companions attended these public recitations (called *'ardah*, and the celebrated last presentation: the *'ardah akheerah*) and corrected their private copies of the Qur'an. Thus the Prophet used to revise the verses and chapters, in the fasting month, and put them in their proper sequence. This was necessary because of the continuity of new revelations. Sometimes a whole chapter was revealed at a stretch, whereas at other times, fragments of the same chapter came continually, and this posed no problems. This was not the case if several chapters began to be revealed simultaneously in fragments (*sunwar dhawat al-'adad* of the historians). In this latter case, one had perforce to note them provisionally and separately on handy materials, such as shoulder blades, palm leaves, slate-like stones, pieces of hides, etc.; and as soon as a chapter was entirely revealed, the secretaries classified these notes (*nu'allif al-Qur'an*) under the personal supervision of the Prophet and made a true copy (cf. Tirmidhi, Ibn Hanbal, Ibn Kathir, etc.). It is also known that the Prophet, who was in the habit of celebrating an additional service of worship every night during the fasting month, would sometimes (even in congregation) recite the Qur'an from the beginning to the end, completing its entire recital in the course of the month. This service (*Tarawih)* continues to be observed with great devotion to this day.

54. When the Prophet breathed his last, a rebellion was afoot in certain parts of the country. In quelling it, several people fell who knew the Qur'an by heart. The caliph Abu-Bakr felt the urgency of codifying the Qur'an and that task was accomplished a few months after the death of the Prophet.

55. During the last years of his life, the Prophet used to employ Zaid ibn Thabit as his chief amanuensis for taking dictation of the newly received revelations. Abu-Bakr charged this same gentleman with the task of preparing a true copy of the entire text in book form. Then there were several *hafizes* [(1)] in Madinah and Zaid was one. He had also attended the *'ardah akheerah* referred to above. The caliph directed him to obtain two written copies of each portion of the text from among those which had been collated with the recitation of the Prophet himself, prior to its inclusion in the corpus. At the direction of the caliph, the people of Madinah brought Zaid copies of the various fragments of the Qur'an which they possessed. The sources declare

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

authoritatively that only two verses were such as had a single documentary evidence and that the rest were supported by the production of numerous copies.

56. The true copy thus prepared was called the *Mus'haf* (bound leaves). It was kept in his own custody by the caliph Abu-Bakr, and after him by his successor 'Umar. Meanwhile, the study of the Qur'an was encouraged everywhere in the Muslim empire. Caliph 'Umar felt the need of sending authentic copies of the text to the provincial centres to avoid deviations; but it was left to his successor, 'Uthman, to bring the task to a head. One of his lieutenants, having returned from far away Armenia, reported that he had found conflicting copies of the Qur'an, and that there were sometimes even quarrels among the different teachers of the Book on this account. 'Uthman caused immediately the copy prepared for Abu-Bakr to be entrusted to a commission, presided over by the above-mentioned Zaid ibn Thabit, for preparing seven copies. He authorized them to revise the old spelling if that was necessary. When the task was completed, the caliph held a public reading of the new 'edition' before the experts present in the capital from among the companions of the Prophet. He then sent these copies to different centres of the vast Islamic world and ordered that thenceforward all copies must be based only on the authentic edition. He then ordered the destruction of copies which deviated in any way from the text which was officially established.

57. It is conceivable that the great military conquests of the early Muslims persuaded some hypocritical spirits to proclaim their outward conversion to Islam for material motives, and to try to do it harm in a clandestine manner. They could have fabricated versions of the Qur'an with interpolations. The crocodile tears shed at the order of the 'Uthman, regarding the destruction of unauthenticated copies of the Qur'an, could have only been by such hypocrites.

58. It is reported that the Prophet sometimes abrogated certain verses that had been communicated to the people previously, and this was done on the strength of new Divine revelations. There were companions who had learnt the first version but who were not aware of the later modifications, either due to death or residence outside Madinah. These persons might have left copies to posterity which, although authentic, were outdated. Again, some Muslims had the habit of asking the Prophet to explain certain terms employed in the holy text, and noting these explanations on the margins of their copies of the Qur'an, in order not to forget them. The copies made later, on the basis of these annotated texts, could sometimes have caused confusion in the matter of the text and the gloss. In spite of the order of the caliph 'Uthman to destroy the inexact texts, there existed in the 3rd and 4th centuries of the *Hijrah* enough matter to compile voluminous works on the "Variants in the Qur'an." These have come down to us, and a close study shows that these "variants" were either due to glosses or mistakes of deciphering the old Arabic writing (which neither possessed vowel signs nor distinguished between letters of close resemblance by means of points, as is done now.) Moreover, different dialects existed in different regions, and the Prophet had allowed the Muslims of these regions to recite in accordance with their dialects, and even to replace the words which were beyond their kith and kin by synonyms which they knew better. This was an emergent measure of grace and clemency. However, from the time of the caliph 'Uthman, public

Mega Lecture

instruction had advanced enough that it was agreed upon that those concessions would no longer be tolerated lest the Divine text be affected and variants of reading take root.

59. The copies of the Qur'an, sent by 'Uthman to the provincial centres, gradually disappeared in the succeeding centuries. One of them is at present in the Topkapi Museum of Istanbul and another incomplete one is now in Tashkent. The Czarist government of Russia had published this latter with a facsimile reproduction, and we see that these copies are identical in text to those otherwise in use. The same is true of other extant MSS of the Qur'an, both complete and fragmentary, dating from the first century of the *Hijrah* onwards.

60. The habit of learning the text of the entire Qur'an by heart dates from the time of the Prophet himself. The caliphs and other heads of Muslim states have always encouraged this habit. A happy coincidence has further reinforced the integrity of the text. In fact, from the very beginning, Muslims have been accustomed to read a work in the presence of its author or one of his authorised pupils and obtain his permission of further transmission of the text established and corrected at the time of study and collation. Those who recited the Qur'an by heart or had simply read the written text acted in the same manner as well. The habit has continued down to our own day, with this remarkable feature: that every master would indicate in detail in the certificate given by him, that not only was the rendering of his pupil correct, but also that it was in conformity with that which this master had learned from his own master, and that this last had affirmed that he in turn had learnt it from his master, the chain leading back to the Prophet. The writer of these lines studied the Qur'an at Madinah with Shaikh al-Qurra, Hasan ash-Sha'ir, and the certificate he obtained, notes among other things, the chain of masters and masters of masters, and in the final act how the master had studied simultaneously from 'Uthman, 'Ali, Ibn Mas'us, Ubaiy ibn Ka'b and Zaid ibn Thabit (all companions of the Prophet) and that all had taught exactly the same text. The number of *hafizes* are counted by hundreds of thousands in the world today, and millions of copies of the text are found in all parts of the globe. And what deserves to be noted is that there is absolutely no difference between the memories of these*hafizes* and the texts employed.

61. The original of the Qur'an was in Arabic, and the same text is still in use. Translations have been made in all the important languages of the world, which is more or less serviceable to those who do not know Arabic. It is to be remembered, however, that it is in the original Arabic language that the text has come down to us, and that there has been no need to retranslate it into Arabic from some later translation.

62. These are some of the remarkable features of the Qur'an, the holy book of the Muslims: (1) a text in the original language (2) a codification under the auspices of the Prophet himself (3) a continued preservation by the simultaneous double control of memory and writing in addition to the study under qualified teachers (4) and this by a large number of individuals in every generation, and the absence of any variants in the text.

Contents of the Qur'an

MegaLecture

63. As stated previously, Muslims believe that the Qur'an is the Word of God, revealed to His messenger Muhammad. This messenger is only an intermediary for the reception and communication of the revelations. His role is neither that of an author nor of a compiler. If the Prophet Muhammad sometimes ordered the suppression of certain verses, that was done merely on the basis of a new revelation coming to him from the Almighty.

64. God is transcendent and beyond all physical perception of man. It is through the medium of a celestial messenger, an angel, that God causes His will and His command to be revealed to His human messenger, for the sake of mankind. God is above all bounds of language. We may in explanation employ the metaphor that the prophets are lightbulbs, and revelation the electric current -- when the current contacts the lightbulb, the lightbulb provides light according to its voltage and colour. The mother-tongue of a prophet is the colour of the lightbulb, whereas the power of the lightbulb, (i.e., the current and other things) are determined by God Himself. The human factor then, is just an instrument of transmission and only an intermediary.

64/a. The Qur'an is, according to Islam, the Word of God, and the Qur'an repeats again and again that the believer must recite it day and night, whenever he can. The mystics have explained quite well that man travels towards God by means and through the Word of God (the word of God being the main road) just like an electric current is the 'road for light' when the lamp is connected to a power supply. This is not empty verboseness. In fact, the Prophet Muhammad had strongly recommended that one should read the whole Qur'an once a week. This has led to its division into seven parts called *manzils*. Further, the Qur'an has 114 chapters, called *surats*, each of which has a number of verses, called *aayats*. In Arabic, *manzil* means a station after the day's journey; *surat* means a walled enclosure, a room; and the root *awa*, from which the word *aayat* is derived, means to go to bed. 'Station,' 'room,' 'bed' - these are the three elements of the journey of the traveller, spiritual or temporal. The traveller undertaking a long spiritual journey has to halt at a station after the day's journey, and requires a room and bed to take rest before a further journeying the next day in his continuous sojourn towards the Eternal and Limitless!

65. The Qur'an is addressed to all humanity, without distinction of race, region or time. Furthermore, it seeks to guide man in all walks of life - spiritual, temporal, individual and collective. It contains directions for the conduct of the head of a State, as well as a simple commoner, of the rich as well as of the poor, for peace as well as for war, for spiritual culture as for commerce and material well-being. The Qur'an seeks primarily to develop the personality of the individual - every being will be personally responsible to his Creator. With this purpose, the Qur'an not only gives commands, but also tries to convince. It appeals to man's reason as it relates stories, parables and metaphors. It describes the attributes of God, Who is one, Creator of all, Knower, Powerful, capable of resuscitating us after death and taking account of our worldly behaviour, Just, Merciful, etc. It contains also the mode of praising God, of pointing out which are the best prayers, what the duties of man are with regard to God, to his fellow-beings and to his own self. This last because we do not belong to ourselves but to God, who has deposited our self with us. The Qur'an speaks of the best rules relating to social life, commerce, marriage, inheritance, penal law, international law, and so on. But the Qur'an is not a book in

Mega Lecture

the ordinary sense - it is a collection of the Words of God, were revealed, during the course of twenty-three years, to His messenger sent among human beings. The Qur'an employs graphically the word "king" for God, and "slave" for man. When a king desires to communicate a message to His slave, He sends a messenger, and gives His instructions to his envoy. Therefore, there are certain things understood and implied; there are repetitions, and even changes of the forms of expression. Thus God speaks sometimes in the first person and sometimes in the third. He says "I" as well as "We" and "He", but never "They". It is a collection of revelations sent occasion by occasion (and this fact must be recalled to the beginner) and one should therefore read it again and again in order to be able to grasp the meaning better. It has directions for every person, every place and for all time.

66. The diction and style of the Qur'an are magnificent and appropriate to its Divine quality. Its recitation moves the spirit even for those who only listen to it without understanding it. In passing, the Qur'an (cf. 17/88, 11/13, 2/23, 10/38) has, by virtue of its claim of a Divine origin, challenged men and jinn to produce collectively even a few verses equal to those of the Qur'an. The challenge has remained unanswered to this day.

Hadith

67. The narrations on Muhammad, the Prophet of Islam, are called *Hadith*, whether they concern what he said or did, or even simply tolerated among his disciples if they said or did something in his presence. This tacit approval implies the permissibility of the conduct in question of the public.

68. The Qur'an has reminded us dozens of times about the juridical importance of the Hadith: "...*obey God and obey the messenger*..." (4/59), "...*what the messenger giveth you, take it; and whatever he forbiddeth, abstain from it*..." (59/7), "*nor doth he speak of his own desire; it is naught save a revelation that is revealed*" (53/3-4), "*And verily in the messenger of God ye have a good example for him who looketh unto God and the Last Day and remembereth God much*" (33/21-22). Thus, whatever the Holy Messenger commanded, it was, in the eyes of the community, the will of his Divine sender. There were cases when the Prophet, not having received a revelation, had made a personal effort to formulate an opinion through common sense. If God did not approve it, a revelation would come to correct him. This internal process of the formation of the *Hadith* came only *post evetum* to the knowledge of the community, and had no practical consequences. But the Hadith has another importance, as under:

69. The Qur'an is often succinct; it's the practice of the Prophet for one to look for the method of application, details and necessary explanations. As an illustration, the Qur'an has said merely, "*Establish the service of worship*," without giving the details of the manner in which it should be celebrated. The Prophet also did not describe everything merely with words. That is why one day he told the faithful: "**Look at me, see how I worship, and follow me.**"

70. The importance of the *Hadith* was increased for the Muslims by the fact that the Prophet Muhammad not only taught, but also took the opportunity of putting his teachings into practice in

Mega Lecture

all the important affairs of life. He lived for twenty-three years after his appointment as the messenger of God. He endowed his community with a religion which he scrupulously practised himself. He founded a state, which he administered as supreme head, maintaining internal peace and order; heading armies for external defence; judging and deciding the litigations of his subjects; punishing criminals, and legislating in all walks of life. He married and provided a model for family life. Another important fact is that he did not declare himself to be above the ordinary law, which he imposed upon others. Therefore his practices did not only involve private conduct, but a detailed interpretation and application of his teachings.

71. As a man, Muhammad was modest and careful in his actions. As a messenger of God, he took all necessary and possible steps for the communication as well as the preservation of the Divine message, the Qur'an. Had he taken the same steps for the preservation of his own sayings, he would have been considered by some to be egotistical. For that reason, the *Hadith* literature is quite different from that of the Qur'an.

Official documents

72. There is a part of the *Hadith* in which its very nature required that it should be written down, namely, the official documents of the Prophet.

73. From a passage of the *Ta'rikh* of at-Tabari, it appears that when the Muslims of Mecca, persecuted by their compatriots, went to Abyssinia for refuge, the Prophet gave them a letter of recommendation addressed to the Negus. There are some other documents likewise written by him before the *Hijrah,* but when he left his native town to settle in Madinah and found invested in himself the state authority, the number and subject matter of his letters increased from day to day.

74. Shortly after his arrival in Madinah, he succeeded in establishing there a city-state which was composed both of the Muslim and non-Muslim inhabitants. He then endowed that state with a written constitution, wherein he mentioned, in a precise manner, the rights and duties of the head of the state and its subjects. He also laid down provisions regarding the functioning of this organisation. This document has come down to us. The Prophet also delineated, in writing, the frontiers of this city-state. About the same time, he ordered a written census of the entire Muslim population, and al-Bukhari says the returns showed 1,500 individual registries.

75. Moreover, there were treaties of alliance and of peace settled with many Arab tribes. Sometimes two copies of the treaty were prepared and each party kept one. Letters-patent were awarded which extended protection to submitting chieftains and confirmed their previous proprietary rights on land and water resources, etc. With the extension of the Islamic state, naturally there was a certain amount of correspondence with provincial governors for communicating new laws and other administrative dispositions, for revising certain judicial or administrative decisions emanating from private initiative of officials, for replying to questions set by these officials to the central government, and regarding taxes, etc.

Mega Lecture

76. There were also missionary letters sent to different sovereigns which invited them to embrace Islam. Some dispatches were to tribal chieftains in Arabia, emperors of Byzantium and Iran, the Negus of Abyssinia among others.

77. For every military expedition volunteers were raised and written lists were maintained. Captured booty was listed in detail to enable an equitable distribution among the members of the expeditionary force.

78. Also the liberation, as well as purchase and sale of slaves, seems to have been recorded by written documents. At least three such documents emanating from the Prophet himself have come down to us.

79. An interesting incident may be mentioned here. On the day of the capture of Mecca in the year 8 H., the Prophet had made an important pronouncement which included certain legal provisions. At the demand of a Yemenite, the Prophet ordered that a written copy of his pronouncement should be prepared and handed over to the person Abu-Shah.

80. We may also mention a case of the translation of the Qur'an. The Prophet had prescribed that every Muslim should celebrate his worship in Arabic. Certain Persians embraced Islam and they did not want to put off prayer till the time they should have committed to memory the Arabic texts or chapters of the Qur'an. With the approval of the Prophet, Salman al-Farsi, a Muslim of Persian origin knowing Arabic, translated into Persian the first chapter of the Qur'an for the immediate above-mentioned requirements of the Persian converts. They employed it till they learned the Arabic text by heart. (Cf. *Mabsut* of Sarakhsi, 1,37;*Nihayah Hashiyat al-Hidayah* by Taj ash-Shari'ah ch. salaat.)

81. Works incorporating these kinds of documents at the time of the Prophet cover several hundreds of pages.

82. It may be observed that the Prophet was particularly interested in public instruction, and he used to say: "**God has sent me as a teacher**(*mu'allim*)." On his arrival in Madinah, his first act was the construction of a mosque, where a part was reserved for school purposes. This was the famous *Suffah* which served as dormitory during the night and as lecture hall during the day for all those who wanted to profit by this facility. In the year 2 H., when the pagan army of Meccans was routed at Badr and a number of prisoners captured, the Prophet ordered that all those prisoners who knew how to read and write could pay their ransom by giving instruction to ten Muslim boys each (cf. Ibn Hanbal and Ibn Sa'd). The Qur'an (11/282) also ordained that commercial credit transactions could only be executed by written documents that were attested by two witnesses. These and other arrangements contributed to the rapid increase of literacy among Muslims. It is not surprising that the companions of the Prophet grew ever more interested in the preservation by writing of the pronouncements of their supreme guide. Like every new and sincere convert, their devotion and enthusiasm were great. A typical example is the following: 'Umar reports that on his arrival at Madinah, he became contractual brother of a local Muslim (at the time of the famous Fraternisation ordered by the Prophet rehabilitating the

Mega Lecture

Meccan refugees) and both of them worked alternatively in a farm of date palms. When 'Umar worked, his companion visited the Prophet and reported to 'Umar in the evening all that he had seen or heard in the presence of the Prophet, and when his turn came, 'Umar did the same. Thus both of them kept abreast of what was happening around the Prophet, e.g., the promulgation of new laws, learning the questions of politics and defence, and so on. As to the written compilation of the Hadith, during the lifetime of the Prophet, the following incidents will speak for themselves:

Compilation of the time of the Prophet

83. At-Tirmidhi reports: One day an Ansarite (Madinan Muslim) complained to the Prophet that he had a weak memory and that he forgot quickly the Prophet's instructive discourses. The Prophet replied: **Take the aid of thy right hand** (i.e., write it down).

84. A large number of sources (at-Tirmidhi, Abu-Dawud, etc.) narrate that 'Abdallah ibn 'Amar ibn al-'As, a young Meccan, had the habit of writing all that the Prophet used to say. One day his comrades rebuked him, saying that the Prophet was a human being, he could sometimes be happy and satisfied, at other times annoyed or angry, and that it was not desirable that one should note indiscriminately all that he uttered. 'Abdallah went to the Prophet and asked him if one could note all that he said. He replied, "Yes." To be accurate, 'Abdallah persisted: "Even when thou art happy and satisfied, even when thou art angry?" The Prophet said: "Of course, by God! Nothing that comes out of this mouth is ever a lie." 'Abdallah gave his compilation the name of *Sahifa Sadiqah* (the book of truth). For several generations it was taught and transmitted as an independent work; it was later incorporated into the larger collections of the Hadith compiled by Ibn Hanbal and others. Ad-Darimi and Ibn 'Abd al-Hakam reported: Once this same Abdallah had his pupils around him and somebody asked: Which of the two cities will be captured by Muslims first, Rome or Constantinople? Abdallah caused an old box to be brought to him, took a book out of it, and after having turned its pages for awhile, read as follows: "One day when *we* were sitting around the Prophet *to write down* what he was saying, someone asked him: Which of the two cities will be captured first, Rome or Constantinople? He replied: The city of the descendants of Heraclius." This narration definitely proves that the companions of the Prophet were interested even during his lifetime in writing down his very words.

85. More important is the case of Anas. Anas was one of the rare Madinans who could read and write when he was only ten years old, was presented, by his devoted parents, to the Prophet as his personal attendant. He did not quit the company of the Prophet till he died. Remaining night and day in his house, Anas had the opportunity of seeing the Prophet and hearing from him that which was not practicable for others. It is Anas who reports the saying of the Prophet: "**Capture science by means of writing**." In later times, one of the pupils of Anas reports: "If we insisted

Mega Lecture

(another version states 'if we were numerous') Anas would unroll sheets of documents and say: These are the sayings of the Prophet of which I have *noted and also read out to him* to correct any mistakes." This important statement speaks not only about the compilation during the lifetime of the Prophet, but also of its collation and verification by the Prophet. The case is cited by numerous classical authorities, such as ar-Ramhurmuzi (d. about 360 H.), al-Hakim (d. 405), al-Khatib al-Baghdadi (d. 463), and these great traditionists cite earlier sources.

Compilations of the time of the companions of the Prophet

86. It was natural that the interest in the biography of the Prophet should have increased after his death. His companions left, for the benefit of their children and relatives, accounts of what they knew of the Prophet. The new converts had a thirst for the sources of their religion. Death was diminishing daily the number of those who knew first hand the *Hadith* and this was an added incentive to those who survived to pay closer attention to the preservation of their memoirs. A large number of works were thus compiled on the sayings and doings of the Prophet, based on the narration of his companions, after the death of the master. Of course that refers to first-hand knowledge.

87. When the Prophet nominated Amr ibn Hazm as governor of Yemen, he gave him written instructions regarding the administrative duties he was to perform.Amr preserved this document, and also procured copies of twenty-one other documents which emanated from the Prophet which were addressed to the tribes of Juhainah, Judham, Taiy, Thaqif, etc. He compiled them as a collection of official documents. This work has come down to us.

88. In the *Sahih* of Muslim, we read that Jabir ibn Abdallah compiled an opuscule [small work] on the pilgrimage of Mecca in which he gave an account of the last pilgrimage of the Prophet which also included his celebrated farewell address which was pronounced on the occasion. Several sources mention also a *Sahifah* of Jabir, which his pupils used to learn by heart. Probably it dealt with the general sayings and doings of the Prophet.

89. Two other companions of the Prophet, Samurah ibn Jundab and Sa'd ibn Ubadah, are also reported to have compiled their memoirs for the benefit of their children. Ibn Hajar mentions them and adds that the work of Samurah was big and voluminous. Ibn 'Abbas, who was very young at the death of the Prophet, learnt many things from his elder comrades, and compiled with this material numerous works. The chroniclers state that when he died, he left a camel-load of writings. Ibn Mas'ud, one of the greatest jurists among the companions, had also compiled a book on *Hadith*, and later his son 'Abd ah-Rahman used to show that to his friends (cf. al-Hakim, *al-Mustadrak*, ch. Ibn Mas'ud).

90. Al-Bukhari narrates that 'Abdallah ibn Abi Awfa, Abu Bakrah and al-Mughirah ibn Shu'bah taught Hadith by correspondence: If anyone desired information about the Prophet, they would reply in writing. They even took the initiative of communicating, to officials and friends for instance, decisions of the Prophet which bore on the problems of the day.

Mega Lecture

91. The following report is more instructive and has been preserved by numerous sources (such as Ibn 'Abd al-Barr's *Jami' Bayan al-Ilm*): 'One day a pupil of Abu-Hurairah told him: Thou hadst told me such and such a thing. Abu-Hurairah, who was apparently in his old age with enfeebled memory, refused to believe the *Hadith*, yet when his pupil insisted that it was from him that he had learnt it, Abu-Hurairah replied: If thou hadst learnt it from me, it must be in my writings. He took him by his hand and conducted him to his house, showed him "many books on the *Hadith* of the Prophet," and at last he found the narration in question. Thereupon he exclaimed: I had told thee that if thou hadst learnt it from me, it must be found in my writings.' It should be noted that the story employs the expression "many books." Abu-Hurairah died in the year 59 H. To one of his pupils, Hammam ibn Munabbih, he dictated (or gave in writing) an opuscule of 138 traditions about the Prophet. This work, which dates from the first half of the first century of the*Hijrah*, has been preserved. It enables us to make a comparison with later compilations of the *Hadith* and to confirm the fact that the memoirs of the ancients on the *Hadith* have been preserved with great care for the benefit of posterity.

92. Adh-Dhahabi (*Tadhkirat al-Huffaz*) reports: The caliph Abu-Bakr compiled a work in which there were 500 traditions of the Prophet, and handed it over to his daughter Aishah. The next morning, he took it back from her and destroyed it, saying: "I wrote what I understood. It is possible however that there might be certain things in it which did not correspond textually with what the Prophet had uttered." As for 'Umar, we learn on the authority of Ma'mar ibn Rashid that during his caliphate, 'Umar once consulted the companions of the Prophet on the subject of codifying the *Hadith.* Everybody seconded the idea. Yet 'Umar continued to hesitate and pray to God for a whole month for guidance and enlightenment. Ultimately he decided not to undertake the task, and said: "Former peoples neglected the Divine Books and concentrated only on the conduct of the prophets. I do not want to set up the possibility of confusion between the Divine Qur'an and the Prophet's Hadith." Latest research shows that formal reports testifying to the writing down of the Hadith concern not less than fifty companions of the Prophet. The details would be too long to elucidate here.

Interdiction on the writing down of Hadith

93. The last two narrations regarding Abu-Bakr and 'Umar are important inasmuch as they explain the real implication of the tradition which says that the Prophet forbade to write down his sayings. If there really was a general interdiction, these two foremost companions of the Prophet would have not dared to even think of the compiling of the *Hadith*; and when they renounced the idea of recording the *Hadith*, they would not have invoked a reason other than the interdiction of the Prophet to silence those who remained in favour of the idea. As far as we know, the only narrators who are reported to have said that the Prophet had ordered not to write down anything other than the Qur'an are Abu-Sa'id al-Khudri, Zaid ibn Thabit, and Abu-Hurairah. Neither the context nor the occasion of this direction is known. One should note that Abu-Sa'id al-Khudri and Zaid ibn Thabit were among the younger companions of the Prophet -- in the year 5 H., they were scarcely 15 years old. However intelligent they might have been, it is comprehensible that the Prophet prohibited them in the early years after the *Hijrah* from noting down his talks. As to Abu-Hurairah, we have just seen that he had himself compiled "many

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

books on the *Hadith*." He is known in history as a very pious man, puritan and rigid. And it is unthinkable that a man of his character would have violated an express prohibition of the Prophet if he had not heard later from the Prophet himself of the lifting of that prohibition. Abu-Hurairah came from Yemen in the year 7 H. to embrace Islam. It is possible that in the first days after his conversion, the Prophet ordered him to write down nothing but the Qur'an; and later, when he had mastered the Qur'an and was able to distinguish between the Divine Book and the *Hadith*, the reason of the interdiction ceased to exist. An important fact is that Ibn 'Abbas is also reported to have said, as his personal opinion, without reference to the Prophet, that the *Hadith* should not be compiled in writing. Nevertheless, as we have seen above, through his prolific power of writing, he surpassed those companions of the Prophet who had consigned the *Hadith* in writing. The contradiction between the word and the deed of those who are nevertheless known for their piety and scrupulous observance of the directions of the Prophet confirms our supposition that the injunction against writing down of the *Hadith* had a certain context which has not been preserved to us in the narrations, and that it had a limited scope. We must therefore seek to reconcile between the two contradictory orders of the Prophet rather than reject them both.

94. Three possible explanations come to our mind: (1) The interdiction might have been individual, and concerned those who had newly learnt the art of writing, or those who had newly embraced Islam and were hardly able to distinguish between the Qur'an and the *Hadith*. The interdiction was waived in case of the proficiency later acquired. (Abu-Hurairah, for instance, came from Yemen, and it is probable that he mastered the *Musnad* of Himyarite script and not the so-called Arabic script prevalent in Mecca and from thence to Madinah.) (2) It might have aimed only at forbidding writing of the *Hadith* on the same sheets of paper which contained chapters of the Qur'an, in order to avoid all possible confusion between the text and the commentary. Abu-Sa'id al-Khudri alludes to it; and we possess the formal injunction of the caliph 'Umar against this particular way of writing Hadith. (3) It might have concerned some particular discourses of the Prophet, for instance, the occasion when he made prophecies regarding the future of Islam and its great spiritual and political conquests; the injunction being motivated by the desire that the belief in predestination may not lead certain people to abandon the spirit of endeavour.

MegaLecture

95. Other explanations may be illustrated, but these will suffice for the present.

In later centuries

96. In the beginning, the compilations of the Hadith were short and individual, every companion recording his own recollections. In the second generation, when students attended lectures of more than one master, it became possible to collect several memoirs in larger volumes, noting carefully the difference of the sources. A few generations later, all the memoirs of the companions of the Prophet were collected, and still later an attempt was made to classify these traditions according to subject matter and deduce juridical rules and other scientific usages. It was required to learn by heart every Hadith, as in the case of the Qur'an, and to aid the memory, one utilized the written texts. Learning from qualified and authorized teachers was also

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

a condition *sine qua non*. This triple method of preservation and security was rigorously observed by some, and less so by others. Hence the relative importance of the different masters and their trustworthiness.

97. Not long after the Prophet, the reporters of the *Hadith* adopted the habit of mentioning not only the name of the Prophet as the ultimate source of the knowledge in question, but also the means, one after another, of obtaining that information. Al-Bukhari, for instance, would say: "My master Ibn Hanbal has said: I have heard my master 'Abd ar-Razzaq saying: My master Ma'mar Ibn Rashid told me: I heard my master Hammam ibn Munabbih tell me: My master Abu-Hurairah told me: I heard the Prophet saying" such and such a thing. For every single report of a few words upon the Prophet, there is such an exhaustive chain of references relating to successive authorities. In a single chain of the narrators, which we have just cited, we find reference made not only to the *Sahih* of al-Bukhari, but also the *Musnad* of Ibn Hanbal, the*Musannaf* of 'Abd ar-Razzaq, the *Jami'* of Ma'mar, and the *Sahifah* of Hammam dictated to him by Abu-Hurairah, the companion of the Prophet. We find the reports of this chain in all these works (which luckily have all come down to us) in exactly the same words. In the presence of a succession of such authoritative sources, for instance it would be a foolish presumption and slanderous to suggest that al-Bukhari had invented the narration and attributed it to the Prophet or fabricated himself the chain of the narrators, or simply collected the folklore, the hearsay of his epoch, and attributed it to the Prophet.

Conclusion

98. It is by this triple safeguard, viz. committing to memory as well as preserving at the same time by writing and studying the same under qualified teachers (in which each method helps the other and makes the integrity of the reports triply sure) that the religious teachings of Islam have been preserved from the beginning down to our present day. This is true not only for the Qur'an, but also the *Hadith* which consists of the memoirs of the companions of the Prophet, and concern the sayings, doings and tacit approval by him of the conduct of his companions. It may be remembered that as a founder of religion too, the Prophet Muhammad had had immense success. In fact, in the year 10 H., he was able to address at 'Arafat (Mecca) a gathering of Muslims (numbering some 140,000) who had come for pilgrimage (without counting many others who had not come to Mecca that year). The biographers of the companions of the Prophet affirm that the number of the companions of the Prophet Muhammad who had reported at least one incident of the life of the Prophet exceeds 100,000. There are bound to be repetitions, but the very multiplicity of the sources recounting one and the same event does add to the trustworthiness of the report. We possess in all about 10,000 reports (eliminating the repetitions) of the *Hadith*, on the life of the Prophet of Islam, and these concern all aspects of his life including directions given by him to his disciples in spiritual as well as temporal matters.

MegaLecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Chapter No: 03

The Islamic Conception of Life

The vitality of any society, people or civilization depends in a large part on its philosophy of life conceived and practised. In his natural state, man scarcely thinks of anything but his own individual interests, and then only later of his close relatives. However, there have been human groups in every epoch who have particularly distinguished themselves. When we study the features and characteristics of past civilizations (and we are now possibly at the dawn of another one) we find that even though one group may become distinguished as the torch-bearer for a civilization in a particular epoch, that does not necessarily mean that all other contemporary groups would be living in a state of savagery. There is instead the relative pre-eminence of one over the other, in the ladder of graded civilizations. For instance, when the Phoenicians appeared on the scene and developed a brilliant civilization, several other contemporary peoples were perhaps almost as civilized, although lacking the occasion an a suitable field of their activity. At the Arabo-Islamic epoch, the Greeks, Romans, Chinese, Indians and others, possessed all the characteristics of civilized peoples. Even so, they did not rise to the heights of the standard-bearers of the civilization of their epoch. In our own time, if the people of the USA and Russia form the vanguard with their nuclear might and other claims, the British, Chinese, French and the Germans follow close behind. Notwithstanding this progress of some, there are, at the same time, even in this second half of the 20th century, in certain parts of the globe, groups still in savagery if not actual cannibalism.

100. The question arises as to why the evolution of some is rapid, and others slow? In an epoch when the Greeks enjoyed a glorious civilization, why was it that Western Europe was barbarian? Why did barbarism prevail in Russia when the Arabs had risen to the height of splendour? The same question may be posed with respect to several countries in several epochs. Is it purely and simply a question of chance and circumstance? Or is it due to the fact that some individuals of lofty note and noble personality were born in one human group to the exclusion of other groups? There are other possible explanations which are more complex and depend upon a variety of co-existing causes which govern the accomplishments of some, and the frustration or even extinction of the other.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

101. There is still another question. After a momentary state of splendour, why do people fall anew into relative obscurity, if not into a semi-barbarous state?

102. We propose to investigate these questions in relation to contemporary Islam, and discuss, if possible, its chances for survival.

103. If one were to believe Ibn Khaldun, the biological factor is the essential cause. At the end of a single generation, the race exhausts its vitality, and for purposes of rejuvenation there must be a change at least in the family of men at the helm of affairs. This racial theory, even though it may be considered a learned exaggeration, can affect ethnic civilizations and such religions which do not admit conversion. Islam luckily escapes this cycle of decadence, for its followers are found among all races, and it continues to achieve greater or smaller progress everywhere in the world. Moreover, it is unanimously recognized that Islam has almost completely eliminated, inside its community, racial prejudices - a feature which permits it to accept, without hesitation, men of any race to be its leaders and standard-bearers. The systematic emancipation of slaves, which was ordered by the Qur'an, presents another glorious example. As a matter of fact there have been several dynasties of Muslim rulers in history, drawn solely from slaves who had been freshly liberated.

104. The life and death of a civilization depends on equal measure on the quality of its basic teaching. If it invites its adherents to renounce the world, spirituality will certainly make great progress, yet the other constituent parts of man, his body, his intellectual faculties, etc., will not be allowed to perform their natural duties and will die even before their season of bloom. If, on the other hand, a civilization lays emphasis only on the material aspects of life, man will make great progress in those aspects at the expense of others. Such a civilization may even become a sort of boomerang which causes its own death. For materialism often engenders egoism and lack of respect for the rights of others, and this creates enemies who await their chance for reprisal. The result is mutual killing. The story of the two brigands is well known. They had captured some booty. One of them went to the town to buy provisions, and the other went to collect wood to prepare the meal. However, each one decided secretly in his heart to get rid of the other and to monopolize the illicit gain. So the one who had gone shopping poisoned the provisions, while his comrade awaited him in ambush and killed him upon his return from the town. Only when he tasted the food, he then joined his companion in the other world.

Mega Lecture

105. There may be another defect inherent in a civilization when its teachings do not contain an innate capacity for development and adaptation to circumstances. However nice its teachings may be for one epoch or one environment, it may not prove so for another. So to be captivated by such a teaching will evidently be fatal to those who come later. An ordinary example would illustrate this point. At a time when there was no electric lighting and when the cultural centres had no stable revenues, it was certainly an act of piety to light a candle in some place of religious interest frequented during the night. Nothing may be said against a belief that an act of piety on the part of a repentant constitutes an expiation and an effacement of the crime committed against God or against man which otherwise was hard to repair. But wouldn't the continuation of lighting a candle in a place which is already brilliantly lit with electric lamps be anything more than a wastage? Let us study Islam in the light of these circumstances.

Islamic Ideology

106. It is well known that the motto of Islam is summed up in the expression of the Qur'an (2/101), "*well-being in this world and well-being in the Hereafter*." Islam certainly will not satisfy the extremists of either school - the ultra-spiritualists (i.e. those who want to renounce all worldly things and mortify themselves as a duty) and the ultra-materialists (i.e. those who do not believe in the rights of others). Yet Islam can be practised by an overwhelming majority of mankind, who follow an intermediate path and seek to develop the body and the soul simultaneously, thus creating a harmonious equilibrium in man as a whole. Islam has insisted on the importance of both these components of man, and of their inseparability, so that one should not be sacrificed for the benefit of the other. If Islam prescribes spiritual duties and practices, these will also contain material advantages. Similarly, if it authorizes an act of temporal utility, it will also show how this act can be a source of spiritual satisfaction. The following examples will illustrate this.

107. One will agree that the aim of spiritual practice is to get closer to the Necessary Being (*dhat wajib al-wujud*), our Creator and Lord, and to obtain His pleasure. Therefore, man tries to "dye himself with the colour of God," as the Qur'an (2/138) enjoins, in order to see with His eyes, to speak with His tongue, to desire with His will -- as a Hadith says. In short, a believer tries to behave entirely according to His will, and seeks to even imitate Him according to one's humble human capacities. A believer must fast at the moment prescribed by the Qur'an, because that is an order of God. To obey an order of the Lord is in itself piety, but in addition to that, the fast will weaken the body and that, in turn, will fortify the soul by diminishing material desires. One feels a spiritual uplift, thinks of God and of everything He does for us, and enjoys

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Mega Lecture

other spiritual benefits. But the fast does material good as well. The acidity which secrete from the glands when one is hungry and thirsty kill many a microbe in the stomach. Also one develops the capacity to bear privation at moments of a crisis and still remain able to carry on one's normal duties undisturbed. If one fasts for material ends, it will have no spiritual value. But if one fasts for gaining the good will of God, the material advantages are never lost. Without entering into a detailed discussion, it may be observed that all other spiritual acts or practices of Islam also have the same double effect - spiritual and temporal. It is the same in worship, whether individual or congregational. It is the same with the abnegation of the self at the moment of the pilgrimage to the House of God; in charity to the poor; and in other religious and spiritual practices apart from the obligatory minimum. If one does something solely for the sake of God, it has a double merit - spiritual advantage without any loss of material benefits. On the other hand, if one does the same thing for material aims, one may obtain the desired object, but the spiritual advantage would be completely lost. Let us recall the celebrated saying of the Prophet Muhammad: "Verily actions are entirely according to motives and intentions."

108. Speaking of a strict temporal act, such as a tax or a war, one pays taxes to the government. It should not be astonishing that Islam considers this act as one of the five basic elements of the Faith, which is as important as belief, worship, fasting and pilgrimage! The significance is deep: One unites the spiritual and the temporal in a single whole and one pays the tax not as a corvée [labour exacted in lieu of paying taxes] or even as a social duty, but solely for the sake of God. When this duty of paying the taxes becomes fixed in the mind as something sacred, a duty unto God from Whom nothing can be concealed and Who is, moreover, capable of resuscitating us and demanding our account, one can easily understand with what care and scruples a believer will pay his dues in the performance of this obligation. Similarly, war is forbidden in Islam except in the way of God, and it is not difficult to understand that this type of soldier is more apt to be humane and will not seek any earthly gain in the course of risking his life. By spiritualising the temporal duties, Islam has had no other motive but to strengthen the spiritual side of man who, in this manner, far from seeking the material advantage of a material thing, aspires to obtain only the pleasure of God thereby. The great mystic al-Ghazzali was not exaggerating when he said: "If somebody worships or fasts for ostentation, that is *shirk* (polytheism) and a worship of one's self, not of God Almighty. On the other hand, if one even cohabits with one's own wife, not for the sake of carnal pleasure, but for the performance of the duty imposed by God, then that is an act of piety and devotion and merits the pleasure of and reward from God."

Mega Lecture

109. Perhaps the corollary of the same all-embracing conception of life is the fact that the Qur'an uses the double formula "believe and do good deeds," The mere profession of faith, without application or practice does not have much value because Islam insists just as much on the one as on the other. In the interests of society, doing good deeds without belief in God is certainly preferable to the practice of evil deeds. But from the spiritual standpoint, a good deed without faith cannot bring salvation in the Hereafter.

110. But how can one distinguish good from the evil? In the first instance, it is the revealed law which can be the criterion alone, but in the latter case, it is one's conscience which can be one's arbiter. When a problem is posed, one can refer to the text of the Islamic law, if necessary. Yet a jurisconsult can only reply on the basis of facts which have been brought to his attention. If certain material facts should have been concealed from him, whether intentionally or otherwise, the consequent injustice cannot be blamed on the law. We may recall a charming little discourse of the Prophet, who said one day: "People! in the complaints which come to me, I decide only on the basis of facts brought to my knowledge. If, by lack of full disclosure, I decide in favour of someone who has no right, let him know that I accord him a part of the Hell-fire." An Islamic judicial maxim stresses the same point when it says: "Consult thy conscience even if the jurisconsults provide justification to thee" (contained in a Hadith reported by Ibn Hanbal and al-Darimi).

111. To never think of others and instead think exclusively of one's own self, is not only inhuman but beastly. However, to think of others after having satisfied one's own needs is normal and permitted. Yet the Qur'an praises those "*who prefer others above themselves though poverty become their lot*" (59:9). Evidently this is only a recommendation and not an obligatory duty which has been laid upon the average man -- if one does not observe it, one will neither be considered a criminal nor a sinner. We can cite the famous saying of the Prophet in the same vein of recommendation: "The best of men is the one who does good to others."

112. The Qur'anic direction may be considered as a characteristic train of Islam, to wit: "*and of the bounty of thy Lord (on thee) by thy discourse*) (93:11). A saying of the Prophet (cited by Tirmidhi) explains this in an impressive manner: "God likes to see the traces of His bounty on His creature." It had so happened that one of his companions came to see him dressed in miserable attire, even though he was a well-to-do person. When the Prophet asked him the reason, he replied that he preferred to have a wretched look, not for miserliness but for piety, as he preferred the needy to his own self. The Prophet did not approve of it, and put a limit to self-

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Mega Lecture

sacrifice and ordered (cf. Abu Dawud): "When God has given you means, the traces of His bounty should be visible on you." The Qur'an (28:77) further enjoins: "...*and neglect not thy portion of this world*." Islam does not recommend that man should stop work and become a parasite. On the contrary, one must use all one's gifts and talents in order to profit from God's creations and acquire as much as possible and what exceeds one's requirements may then go to aid those who lack the necessaries. The Prophet has unequivocally said: "It is better that you leave behind you relatives who are well off rather than obliging them to beg alms of others." Notwithstanding the imposition of heavy daily practices, Islam does not demand mortification or voluntary misery. On the contrary, the Qur'an reproaches those who would develop such an attitude:

"*Say: Who hath forbidden the adornment of God which He hath brought forth for His servants, and the delicious things of nourishment? Say: they are, in the life of this world, for those who believe, being exclusively for them on the Day of Resurrection. Thus do We detail Our commands for people who have knowledge*." (Qur'an 7/32)

There are things permitted by the Divine law and to deny for one's self deliberately is not necessarily an act of piety, as would be the case of abstaining from things forbidden by the same law.

Belief in God

113. Man seems to have always sought to know his Creator for the sake of obeying Him. The best religious leaders of every epoch and civilization have established certain rules of conduct for this purpose. The primitive people worshipped the manifestations of power and beneficence of God, hoping thus to please Him. Some others believed in two separate gods, one of the good and the other of the evil. Yet they overlooked the logical consequences of such a distinction which implies a civil war between gods. Still others have enshrouded God with mysteries which mystify the person of God sometimes. And some others have felt the need of such symbols, formulas or gestures, which will hardly distinguish their theological conceptions from idolatry or Polytheism.

114. In this field, Islam has its particularity. It believes in the absolute Oneness of God, and prescribes a form of worship and prayer which will admit neither images nor symbols (considering both to be the remnants of primitivism and idolatry). In Islam, God is not only transcendent and non-material, beyond any physical perception (cf. Qur'an 6/103: "*Sight*

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Mega Lecture

comprehends Him not"), but He is also Immanent, Omnipresent and Omnipotent (cf. Qur'an 50/16, 56/85, 58/7). The relation between man and his Creator are direct and personal, and do not require any intermediary. Even the saintliest of the saints, such as prophets, are only guides and messengers and it is left to the individual to make a choice and be directly responsible to God.

115. Thus it will be seen that Islam seeks to develop the personality of the individual. It admits that man has his weaknesses, as he is constituted simultaneously of capacities for both good and evil. Yet it does not admit that there is original sin in him, because that would be an injustice. If Adam had committed a sin, this should create no responsibility on his posterity, and so each individual human being remains responsible for his personal account only.

116. In his weakness, an individual may commit offences against God or against his fellow creatures. Each offence has, in principle, a proportionate liability (punishment). Yet Islam recognizes the possibility of pardon, the elements of which are repentance and reparation. As to offences against man, they should be amended, as far as possible, so that the victim may pardon either gratuitously, or at the restitution of the object taken away from him, or by having it replaced, or in any similar way. As regards offences against God, man may receive either a suitable punishment or a gracious pardon from the Lord. Islam does not admit that God needs to punish first some innocent person in order to accord His pardon to other repentant sinners, for this vicarious punishment would be unjust on the part of God.

Society

117. Even as Islam seeks to develop individuality in man, it seeks also social collectivity. This can be seen in all its prescriptions, be they religious or temporal. Thus, the service of worship is collective in principle (in case of need, if there is some exemption regarding the five daily prayers, there is none regarding the weekly or annual prayer services); pilgrimage is even a more manifest example, since the believers assemble in the same place, and come from all points of the globe; the collective aspect of fasting manifests itself in the fact that it takes place in the same month for the faithful all over the world; the requirement of having a caliph, the obligation of paying the zakat-tax intended for the needs of the collectivity, etc. -- all these things affirm the same objective. It goes without saying that in a collectivity, or society, there is a force which people do not possess individually.

Mega Lecture

118. For reasons best known to God, He has endowed different individuals with different talents. Two children with the same parents, two students in the same class do not always have the same qualities or capacities. All lands are not equally fertile; climates differ; two trees of the same species do not produce the same quantity or quality. Every being, every part of a being has its own idiosyncrasies. On the basis of this natural phenomenon, Islam affirms the original equality of all on the one hand, whereas on the other hand, the superiority of individuals one over the other. We are all creatures of the same Lord, and material superiority does not count for obtaining the greater appreciation of God. **Piety alone is the criterion of the greatness of the individual.** After all, life in this world is but ephemeral, and there must be a difference between the behaviour of a man and of a beast.

Nationality

119. It is in this sense that Islam rejects the narrow basis of birth and common blood as the element of solidarity. The attachment to parentage or to the soil on which one is born, is no doubt natural; yet the very interest of the human race demands a certain tolerance towards other similar groups. The distribution of the natural wealth in different parts of the world in varying quantities renders the world as interdependent. Inevitably one is forced to "live and let live." Otherwise an incessant succession of vendettas would destroy all. Nationality on the basis of language, race, colour or birthplace is too primitive, and therein is a fatality - an impasse - something in which man has no choice. The Islamic notion is progressive and it is based solely on the choice of the individual, for it proposes the unity of all those who believe in the same ideology, without distinction of race, tongue, or place of abode. Since extermination or subjugation of others is excluded, the only valid possibility is assimilation. And what means can serve this assimilation better if not the belief in the same ideology? It may be repeated that Islamic ideology is a synthesis of the requirements both of body and soul. Moreover it inspires tolerance. Islam has proclaimed that God has always sent His messengers to different peoples in different epochs. Islam itself claims nothing more than the function of renewing and reviving the eternal message of God, so often repeated at the hands of prophets. It prohibits all compulsion in the matter of religious beliefs. Also, no matter how unbelievable it may sound, Islam is under the self-imposed religious dogmatic duty to give autonomy to non-Muslims who reside on the soil of the Islamic State. The Qur'an, the *Hadith* and the practice of all time demand that non-Muslims should have their own laws, administrated by their own tribunals, with their own judges, and without any interference on the part of Muslim authorities, whether it be in social or religious matters.

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Economic Outlook

120. The social importance of economic questions is self-evident. The Qur'an does not exaggerate when it declares (4:5) that material goods constitute the very means of the subsistence of humanity. If everyone were to think of no-one but himself, society will be in grave danger, because there are always very few rich and very many poor. In the struggle for existence, the vast majority of the starving will in the long run exterminate the small minority of the rich. One can bear many privations, but not basic sustenance. The Islamic conception on this subject is well known. It envisages the constant redistribution and dispersal of national wealth. Thus, the poor are exempt from taxation, whereas the rich are taxed to provide for the needy. Again, there are laws which require the obligatory distribution of the heritage; those which forbid the accumulation of wealth in the hands of the few by banning interest on loans and prohibiting bequests to the detriment of near relatives, an so on; and those which prescribe rules for the expenditure of the State revenue, and which aim at a beneficial redistribution of this income among the beneficiaries among which the poor top the list. If this principle is kept in view, it tolerates differences in the means and method according to regions, epochs and circumstances, provided the goal is achieved. The competition of free enterprise may be tolerated as long as it does not degenerate into a cut-throat exploitation and ruin of those who are economically weak. The planning of the whole may equally be tolerated if that appears necessary, due to circumstances of economic and demographic evolution. In any case, wastage of goods and as well as of energy is to be avoided, and such means adopted which are better adapted to the needs of the moment.

Free Will and Predestination

121. This leads us to the philosophic question of the free-will. This eternal dilemma can never be resolved by logic alone. For, if man enjoys free-will with respect to all his acts, the omnipotence of God suffers thereby. Similarly, if God predestines, why should man be held responsible for his acts? The Prophet Muhammad had emphatically recommended that his adherents not to engage in discussions on this topic "which has led astray those peoples who preceded you" (as Ibn Hanbal, Tirmidhi and others report), and he has separated the two questions, *viz.,* the omnipotence of God and the responsibility of man. In fact there is no logic in love, and the Muslim loves his Creator, i.e., he cannot admit that God should have defective attributes, for God is not only wise and powerful, but also just and merciful in the highest degree. Islam separates celestial affairs, which are the attributes of God, from human temporal

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

matters, and insists on the faithful to act. And since the Divine will rests concealed from man, it is man's duty never to despair after a preliminary failure, but to try again and again until the object is either realized or becomes impossible to attain. In this latter case, the Islamic concept of predestination comes to console man: that such and such was the will of God, and success or failure in this world has no importance in connection with eternal salvation. In this matter, God judges according to intention and effort and not according to whether it is successful or not.

122. According to the Qur'an (53/36-42 among other passages), such is the truth always revealed by God to His successive messengers:

"*Or hath he not news of what is in the leaves (Books) of Moses and of Abraham who paid his debt: That no laden one shall bear another's load, and that man hath only that for which he maketh effort, and that his effort will be seen, and afterwards he will be repaid for it with the fullest payment; and that thy Lord. He is the goal....?*"

We are rewarded only because we have accepted also to be punished for acts which are predestined. This seems to be the Divine Deposit [i.e. to place for safekeeping] with which we have been entrusted, when the Qur'an (33/72) reports: *"We did indeed offer the Trust to the heavens and the earth and the mountains; but they refused to undertake it, being afraid thereof: but Man undertook it; -- he was indeed unjust and ignorant."* God said: "*I shall predestine your acts, and want to reward or punish you according to whether they are good or evil*. Other created beings said: How? Thou wilt create, and we have to be responsible for the same? They got afraid. Man believed in the limitless mercy of the Lord, and said: Yes Lord, I accept to take this responsibility and the Deposit of Thine. This pleased the Lord so much that He ordered even the angels to prostrate before Man. To sum up, since Islam separates completely the two questions, it is not difficult for it to admit simultaneously the requirement of man (effort, sense of responsibility) and the rights of God with all His attributes, including the power to predetermine.

123. Predetermination in Islam has another significance which is no less important. Namely, it is God alone Who ascribes to a human act the quality of good or evil. It is God Who is the source of all law. It is the Divine prescriptions which are to be observed in all our behaviour. He communicates to us through His chosen messengers. (Muhammad was the last of these also the one whose teachings have been the better preserved.) We do not possess originals of the ancient messages which have suffered damage in the unhappy fratricidal wars of human society. The Qur'an is not only the exception to the rule, but also constitutes the latest Divine

Mega Lecture

message. It is commonplace that a law which is later in date, will abrogate former dispensations from the same legislator.

124. In conclusion, let us refer to another trait of Islamic life: It is the duty of a Muslim not only to follow the Divine law in his daily behaviour in his life (in matters temporal as well as spiritual) as an individual as well as a part of the collectivity. Also he is to contribute according to his capacities and possibilities to the propagation of this ideology, which is based on Divine revelation and intended for the well-being of all.

125. It will be seen that such a consolidated creed covers man's entire life, materially and spiritually, and that one lives in this world in the preparation for the Hereafter.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Chapter No: 04

Faith and Belief

Men believe in all sorts of things - **in truth** (with all the relativity which this concept has), **in superstitions**, and sometimes even in what is based on misconceptions. Among other factors, beliefs can change with age and experience. But certain beliefs are shared in common by a whole group. In this context, the most important aspect is the idea of man regarding his own existence - when has he come . . . where does he go . . . who has created him . . . what is the object of his existence . . . and so on. Metaphysics will try to answer questions of mental anguish, but that is only a part of religion which is more comprehensive and answers all associated questions. The science which treats this is religion. Beliefs is purely a personal affair. But nevertheless, the history of the human species has known many an act of fratricidal violence and horror in this connection, of which even the beasts would be ashamed. The basic principle of Islam in this matter is the following verse of the Qur'an:
"***There is no compulsion in religion; the right direction is henceforth distinct from error; and he who rejecteth the Devil and believeth in God hath grasped a firm handhold which will never break; God is Hearer, Knower***." [Qur'an 2:256]
It is a charity and even a sacrifice to guide others and to struggle to dispel the ignorance of fellow-beings without compelling anybody to any belief whatsoever. Such is the attitude of Islam.

127. Man's knowledge and intelligence are in a process of continual evolution. The medical or mathematical knowledge of a Galen or of a Euclid scarcely suffices today even for the matriculation examination. University students require much more knowledge than that. In the field of religious dogma, primitive man was perhaps even incapable of the abstract notion of a transcendental God, Whose worship would require neither symbols nor material representations. Even his language was incapable of translating sublime ideas without being forced to use terms which would not be very appropriate for abstract notions.

128. Islam lays a strong emphasis on the fact that man is composed simultaneously of two elements - body and soul - and that he shouldn't neglect either one of these for the sole profit of the other. To devote oneself exclusively to spiritual needs would be to aspire to become an angel (although God has created angels a separate beings). Whereas to dedicate oneself to purely material needs would be to be degraded to the condition of a beast, a plant, if not a devil (God has created for this purpose objects other than men). The aim of the creation of man with a dual capacity would remain unfulfilled if he does not maintain a harmonious equilibrium between the requirements of the body and those of the soul simultaneously.

129. Muslims owe their religious faith to Muhammad, the messenger of God. One day the Prophet Muhammad himself replied to a question as to what is Faith and said: **"Thou shalt believe in the One God, in His angelic messengers, in His revealed books, in His human**

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

messengers, in the Last Day (or Resurrection and final judgement) and in the determination of Good and evil by God." On the same occasion, he explained as to what signifies submission to God in practice, and what is the best method of obedience. [see ch. 5 & 6 Introduction to Islam]

God

130. Muslims have nothing in common with atheists, polytheists, or those who associate others with the One God. The Arabic word for One God is *Allah*, Lord and Creator of the universe.

131. Even the simplest, primitive and uncultured man knows well that one cannot be the creator of one's own self and that there ought to be a Creator of us all, of the entire universe. Atheism and materialism does not respond to this logical need.

132. To believe in polytheism would entail the difficulty of the division of power between several gods, if not a civil war among them. One can easily see that everything in the universe is interdependent. Man, for instance, requires the aid of plants, metals, animals and stars, just as each one of these objects needs another's help in some way or other. The division of Divine powers thus become impracticable.

133. In their praiseworthy solicitude, for not attributing evil to God, certain thinkers have thought of two different gods: a god of good and a god of evil. But the question is whether the two would act in mutual accord, or would there arise conflicts between them? In the first case, the duality becomes redundant and superfluous. And if the god of good consents to evil, then he would even become an accomplice in that evil, thus vitiating the very purpose of the duality. In the second case, one would have to admit that the god of evil would be more often victorious and obtain the upper hand. Should one believe then in a weakling, the god of good, as God? Moreover, evil is a relative thing. With regard to one, if something is evil, then the same thing becomes a good with regard to another person, and since absolute evil does not exist, there is no attribution of the evil to God.

134. Monotheism alone, pure and unmixed, can satisfy reason. God is One, though He is capable of doing all sorts of things. Hence the multiplicity of His attributes. God is not only the creator, but also the master of all. He rules over the Heavens and the earth and nothing moves without His knowledge and His permission. The Prophet Muhammad has said that God has ninety-nine "most beautiful names" for ninety-nine principal attributes: i.e., He is the creator, the essence of the existence of all, wise, just, merciful, omnipresent, omnipotent, omniscient, determinant of everything, to Whom belongs life, death, resurrection, etc., etc.

135. It follows then that the conception of God differs according to individual -- a philosopher does not envisage it in the same manner as a man in the street. The Prophet Muhammad admired the fervour of the faith of simple folk, and often gave the example of "the faith of an old woman." That is, unshakable and full of sincere conviction. The beautiful little story of the elephant and a group of blind men is well known . . . They had never before heard of an

Mega Lecture

elephant, so on its arrival each of them approached the strange animal. One laid his hand on its trunk, another on its ear, a third on its leg, a fourth on its tail, another on its tusks, etc. Upon their return, each one exchanged impressions and described the elephant in his own manner and personal experience. For example, that it was like a column, like a wing, something hard like stone, or soft and slender. Everyone was right, yet none had found the whole truth which lay beyond his perceptive ability. If we replace the blind men of this parable by searchers of the Invisible God, we can easily realize the relative veracity of individual experiences. As certain mystics of early Islam have observed, "there is a truth about God known to the man in the street, another known to the initiated, yet another to the inspired prophets, and lastly the one known to God Himself." In the exposé given above, on the authority of the Prophet of Islam, there is enough elasticity in order to satisfy the needs of different categories of men - learned as well as ignorant, intelligent as well as simple, poets, artists, jurists, mystics, theologians and the rest. The point of view and the angle of vision may differ according to the individual, yet the object of vision remains constant.

136. Muslim savants have constructed their entire system on a juridical basis, where rights and duties are correlative. God has given us the organs and faculties which we possess, and every gift implies a particular obligation. To worship God, to be thankful to Him, to obey Him, to shun all that does not suit His universal Divinity - all these constitute the individual duties of each person, for which each person shall be personally responsible.

The Angels

137. God being invisible and beyond all physical perception, it was necessary to have some means of contact between man and God, otherwise it would not be possible to follow the Divine will. God is the creator not only of our bodies, but also of all our faculties, which are diverse and each capable of development. It is He Who has given us intuition, moral conscience, and means to guide us in the right path. The human spirit is capable of both good and evil inspirations. Among the common folk it is possible that good people receive sometimes evil inspirations (temptations) and bad people good inspirations. Inspirations can come from someone other than God also, such as evil suggestions which come from the Devil. It is the grace of God which enables our reason to distinguish between that which is celestial and worthy of following, and that which is diabolic and fit to be shunned.

138. There are several ways to establish contact or communication between man and God. The best would have been incarnation, but Islam has rejected it. It would be too degrading for a transcendent God to become man, to eat, drink, be tortured by His own creatures, and even be put to death. However close a man may approach God in his journey towards Him, even in his highest ascension, man remains man and is very much remote from God. Man may annihilate himself, like the mystics, and efface his personality completely in order to act according to the will of God, but still - and let us repeat that - man remains man and subject to all his weaknesses, and God is above all these insufficiencies.

MegaLecture

139. Among other means of communication between man and God which are at the disposal of man, perhaps the feeblest is a dream. According to the Prophet, good dreams are suggested by God and guide man in the right direction.

140. Another means is *ilqa* (literally, throwing something towards someone), a kind of auto-suggestion or intuition, of presentiment of solutions in case of impasses or insoluble or difficult problems.

141. There is also the *ilham*, which may be translated as 'Divine inspiration. Things are suggested to the heart (mind) of a man whose soul is sufficiently developed in the virtues of justice, charity, disinterestedness, and benevolence to others. The saints of all epochs in all countries have enjoyed this grace. When someone devotes one's self to God and tries to forget one's self, there are moments *of very short duration* when the state of the presence of God flashes like lightning, in which one understands without effort that which no other effort would have succeeded in making him aware. The human spirit, or his heart as the ancients said, is thus enlightened. Then there is a sentiment of conviction, contentment and realization of truth. It is God Who guides him and controls him and his thoughts as well as his actions. Even the prophets, *the human messengers of God*, get this kind of direction, among others. Nevertheless, there remains the possibility of error of judgement or of comprehension on the part of man. The mystics affirm that sometimes even the most pious of men are led astray by their imperceptible ego, not being able to distinguish base inspirations that come as a Divine trial.

142. The highest degree of contact, the surest and the most infallible means of communication between man and his Creator, is called *wahy* by the Prophet Muhammad. This is not an ordinary inspiration, but a veritable revelation made to man from God - a celestial communication. Man is matter, but on the contrary, God is even above the spirit and therefore beyond all possibility of direct physical contact with man (Qur'an 6/103). God is omnipresent [ever present] and, as the Qur'an says "*nearer to man than his jugular vein*" [50:15]. Yet no physical contact is possible. Therefore it is a *malak* (lit. a messenger), that is, a celestial message-bearer (commonly translated as 'angel') who serves as an intermediary, or the channel of the transmission of the God's message to His human agent or messenger (i.e., the prophet). None except a prophet receives such a revelation through the intermediary of a celestial messenger. It ought to be remembered that, in Islam, prophet does not mean one who makes prophecies and predictions, but only an envoy of God, a bearer of Divine message intended for his people. As to the angel, it does not enter in the scope of our studies here to discuss whether it is a spiritual being, distinct from the material beings in the universe, or something else.

143. According to the Qur'an, the celestial messenger who brought revelations to the Prophet is called Jibril (Jibrail, Gabriel), which etymologically means 'the power of God.' The Qur'an cites also Mikal (Mikail, Michael) without indicating his functions. The functionary in charge of hell is named Malik (lit. 'master' or 'owner'). It also speaks of other angels without name and without attributes, all of whom execute the orders of the Lord. The Islamic belief is that Jibril, also

Mega Lecture

described in the Qur'an as "trustworthy spirit" (*al-ruh al-amin*), stands above all. In the sayings of the Prophet Muhammad, as distinct from the Qur'an, we read that this celestial messenger, Jibril, did not always appear in the same form to the Prophet. The Prophet saw him sometimes like a being suspended in the air, sometimes in the shape of a man, sometimes like a being having wings, etc. In a narration preserved by Ibn Hanbal (1, 53 or No. 374), it is reported that one day in the presence of many people, an unknown person came and put some questions to the Prophet Muhammad, and then went away. Several days afterwards, the Prophet told his companions: "**I am persuaded to believe that the person who put to me questions on that day was none other than Gabriel, who had come to teach you your religion; and never was I so tardy in recognizing him**." It was so because he had come to examine the Prophet and not to communicate to him some message from God.

144. The way in which the revelation used to come could be deduced from the following reports in which the Prophet himself or his onlookers have described it: **"Sometimes it came to me like the beating sound of the bell - and this is the hardest experience for me - and when that ceases, I retain well engraved in my memory all that it has said; but sometimes the angel appears to me in the shape of a human being and speaks to me and I retain what he says"** (Bukhari). In the transmission of Ibn Hanbal, this same report reads: "**I hear the beating sounds and thereupon I keep silent; there is not an occasion of the revelation to me when I do not fear that my soul will depart**." His Companions relate their observations, "whenever a revelation came to him, a sort of rest (immobility) captured him." (Ibn Hanbal) Or, "whenever the revelation came to the messenger of God, he was overwhelmed and remained in this state a while as if he was intoxicated." (Ibn Sa'd) Or, "the revelation came to him in the coldest day, and when it ceased, the front of the Prophet perspired with (sweat falling as) pearls." (Bukhari) Or, "once when the moment (of revelation) arrived, he bent his head inside (a garment?), and lo, the face of the messenger of God had become red, and he snored; later the state vanished" (Bukhari). Or, "whenever the revelation came, he suffered therefrom and his face darkened." (Ibn Sa'd) Or, "when the revelation came to him, we heard near him like the humming sound of bees." (Ibn Hanbal and Abu Hu-aim) Or, "the Prophet suffered great pain when the revelation came to him, and he used to move his lips." (Bukhari) Another series of reports say that he then felt the weight of a great load, and said, "I saw the Prophet while he was on his camel when a revelation came to him. The camel began to foam with rage and twist its legs to the point that I feared that they would break with a crack. In fact sometimes the camel sat down, but sometimes it would obstinately try to stand, with legs planted like pegs all through the time of revelation, and this lasted until the state (of revelation) vanished, and sweat would fall from him like pearls." (Ibn Sa'd) Or, "the load almost broke the leg of the camel with a crack" (Ibn Hanbal). Zaid Ibn Thabit reports his personal experience of a certain day in the following words: "His leg lay on my thigh and weighed so heavy that I feared that my femur would break with a crack" (Bukhari). In another version, there is this addition: "... had it not been for the Prophet of God, I would have pushed a cry and taken away my leg." Other reports say: "The revelation came to him once while he was standing on the pulpit of the Mosque and he remained immobile." (Ibn Hanbal) Or, "he was holding a loaf of meat (during his meal) when a revelation came to him, and when the state ceased, the loaf was still in his hand" (Ibn Hanbal). At such an occasion, the Prophet sometimes lay on his back, sometimes the inmates even

Mega Lecture

covered his face in respect with a piece of cloth, as the circumstance may be. Yet he never lost his consciousness nor control of his self. In the early times of the mission, he used to repeat aloud, during the course of the revelation, what was revealed to him, but while still at Mecca, he abandoned this habit of simultaneous repeating, but remained silent until the end of the state of revelation, and then he communicated the message of God to his secretaries to note (as is mentioned in the Qur'an 75/16): "***Stir not thy tongue herewith to hasten it; upon Us the putting together and the reading thereof.***" **And again (20/114): "*And hasten not with the Qur'an ere its revelation hath been perfected unto thee and say: my Lord, increase me in knowledge.***" And when the Prophet returned to his normal state, he used to dictate to his scribes the portion of the Qur'an which had just been received by him, in order to publish it amongst the Muslims and to multiply the copies. In his *al-Mab'ath wa'l-Maghazi* (MS of Fes), Ibn Ishaq reports: "Whenever part of the Qur'an was revealed to the Messenger of God, he first recited it among men, and then among women."

The Revealed Books

145. It is the duty of man to obey God, being the Lord of the earth as well as of heavens, more so because, in His mercy, He sent His messengers for the benefit of man. God is the sovereign and the source of all law, spiritual as well as temporal. We have just spoken of the revelations and communications of the will of God to man. It is the collection and compilation of these revelations which constitute the Revealed Books.

146. The formula of the creed enunciated by the Prophet Muhammad, speaks of the **Books** - not merely of the **Book** - which would refer to the Qur'an only. This tolerance is characteristic of his teaching. The Qur'an speaks of it in numerous passages. For instance (2/285): "***Each one (of the Muslims) believeth in God and His angels and His books and His messengers*****," and says "*We make no distinction between any of His messengers*.**" Again (35/24) it declares: "*...**and there is not a nation but a warner hath passed among them.***" **And yet again (4/164, 40/78): "*Verily We sent messengers before thee (O Muhammad), among them those of whom We have told thee, and some of them We have not told thee about*.**" The Qur'an names and recognized the scrolls of Abraham, the Torah of Moses, the Psalter of David and the Gospel of Jesus as the books revealed by God.

147. It is true that there is no trace today of the scrolls of Abraham. One knows the sad story of the Torah of Moses and how it was destroyed by Pagans several times. The same fate befell the Psalter. As for Jesus, he had not had the time to compile or dictate what he preached. It was his disciples and their successors who gleaned his utterances and transmitted them to posterity in a number of recensions [a critical revision of the text] , of which at least 70 recensions of the Gospels are known, and with the exception of four, all are declared by the Church to be apocryphal. Be that as it may, the dogma for every Muslim is to believe not only in the Qur'an, but also in the collections of the Divine revelations of pre-Islamic epochs. The Prophet of Islam did not mention Buddha nor Zoroaster nor the founders of Indian Brahminism, so Muslims are not authorized to affirm categorically the Divine character, for instance, of Avesta or of the Hindu Vedas. Nonetheless they cannot formally reject either the possibility of the Vedas and Avesta

Mega Lecture

having been originally based on Divine revelations, nor having suffered a fate similar to that of the Pentateuch of Moses. The same is true in connection with what appertains to China, Greece and other lands.

The Messengers of God (Prophets)

148. An angel brings the message of God to a chosen man, and it is this latter who is charged with its communication to the people. In Quranic terminology, this human agent of the message is differently called:*nabi* (prophet), *rasool* (messenger), *mursal* (envoy), *bashir* (announcer), *nadhir* (warner), etc.

149. Prophets are men of great piety and models of good behaviour, spiritual as well as temporal and social. Miracles are not necessary for them (although history attributes miracles to all of them and they themselves have always affirmed that it is not they but God who did that); it is their teaching alone which is the criterion of their veracity.

150. According to the Qur'an, there were certain prophets who had received the revelation of Divine Books, and there were others who did not receive new Books but had to follow the Books revealed to their predecessors. The Divine messages do not disagree on fundamental truths, such as the Oneness of God, the demand for doing good and abstaining from evil, etc., yet they may differ with regards to the rules of social conduct in accordance with the social evolution attained by a people. If God has sent successive prophets, then that is a proof that previous directions had been abrogated and replaced by new ones, and, except for these latter, certain of the old rules tacitly or explicitly retained.

151. Certain prophets were given the Divine mission of educating members of a single house (tribe or clan), or of a single race, or of a single region whereas others had vaster missions, embracing the entire humanity and extending over all time.

152. The Qur'an expressly mentions certain prophets such as: Adam, Enoch, Noah, Abraham, Ishmael, Isaac, Jacob, David, Moses, Salih, Hud, Jesus, John the Baptist, and Muhammad. But the Qur'an is explicit that there were also others before Muhammad, who was the seal and the last of the messengers of God.

The Eschatology

153. The Prophet Muhammad has also demanded belief in the doomsday. Man will be revived after his death, and God will judge him on the basis of his deeds during the life of this world, in order to reward his good actions and punish him for the evil ones. One day our universe will be destroyed by the order of God, and then, after a certain lapse of time, He Who had created us first would bring us back to life. Paradise as a reward and Hell as a punishment are but graphic terms to make us understand a state of things which is beyond all notions of our life in this world. The Qur'an (32:17) says, "***No soul knoweth what is kept hid from them - or joy as a***

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Mega Lecture

reward for what they used to do." **Again (9/72), "*God promiseth to the believers, men and women, Gardens underneath which rivulets flow, wherein they will abide - blessed dwellings in Gardens of Eden - and the pleasure of God is grander still; that is the supreme triumph***." So this pleasure on His part is over and above even the Gardens of Eden. In yet another passage of the Qur'an (10/20) we read, "***For those who do good is what is the best, and more (thereto).***" Al-Bukhari, Muslim, etc. report that the Prophet used to refer to this verse, saying that after Paradise there would be the vision of God, the ultimate reward of the pious. As far as Paradise is concerned, an oft-quoted utterance of the Prophet Muhammad is, "**God says, 'I have prepared for My pious slaves things in Paradise, the like of which no eye has ever seen, nor ear ever heard, nor even human heart (mind) ever thought of.' "** As to what is beyond Paradise, Bukhari, Muslim, Tirmidhi and other great sources record an important saying of the Prophet, "**When the people meriting Paradise will have entered it, God will tell them: 'Ask Me what else can I add to you.' People will wonder, having been honoured, given Paradise and saved from Hell, and will not know what to ask. Thereupon God will remove the veil, and nothing would be lovelier than gazing at the Lord.**" (In another version, instead of 'veil', 'hijab', 'the garb of grandeur' *Rida-al-Kibriya* is used.) In other words, the opportunity of contemplating God would be the highest and the real reward of the Believer, this for those who are capable of understanding and appreciating the abstract notion of the other World. It is in the light of this authoritative interpretation, one should read what the Qur'an and the Hadith unceasingly describe for the common man with regard to the joys of Paradise and the horrors of Hell (in terms which remind us of our surroundings in this world): there are gardens and rivulets or canals in Paradise, there are young and beautiful girls, there are carpets and luxurious garments, pearls, precious stones, fruits, wine, and all that man would desire. Similarly, in hell there is fire, there are serpents, boiling water and other tortures, there are parts that are extremely cold. And in spite of these sufferings, there will be no death to remove them. All this is easily explained when one thinks of the vast majority of men, of the common masses, to whom the Divine message is addressed. It is necessary to speak to everyone according to his capacity of understanding and of intelligence. One day, when the Prophet Muhammad was speaking to a company of the faithful about Paradise and its pleasures (including its flying horses), a Bedouin rose and put the question: "Will there be camels also?" The Prophet smiled and gentle replied: "**There will be everything that one would desire**" (Ibn Hanbal and Tirmidhi). The Qur'an speaks of Paradise and Hell simply a means of persuading the average man to lead a just life and to march in the path of truth. It attaches no importance to details, whether they describe a place or a state of things. That should not interest us either for a Muslim believes in them without asking 'how?'

154. It goes without saying that Paradise will be eternal - once meriting it, there would be no question of being ejected from it. The Qur'an assures us (15/48): "***Pain will not touch them, and there is no expulsion from it.***" Some would enter it forthwith, while others would suffer longer or shorter periods of detention in Hell before meriting Paradise. But the question is whether Hell is eternal for the unbelievers. The opinions of the Muslim theologians have differed on those points, although a great majority of them affirm on the basis of the Quranic verses (4/48, 4/116) that God may pardon every sin and every crime except disbelief in God, and that the punishment that would be meted out for this last sin would be eternal. Others opine that

Mega Lecture

even the punishment of disbelief may one day be terminated by the grace of God. These theologians deduce their opinions also from certain verses of the Qur'an (11/107, 39/35, etc.). We need not pursue further this discussion, but hope for God's unlimited mercy.

Predestination and Free Will

155. In his exposé, the Prophet Muhammad has lastly demanded the belief that the determination (*qadr*) of all good and evil is from God. Does this phrase signify that everything is predestined for man, or does the statement merely imply that the qualification of good and evil in a given act depends on God? In other words, nothing is good or evil in itself, but it is so only because God has declared it to be so and man has nothing to do but observe it.

156. In fact, here is a dilemma for the theologian. If we declare that man is responsible for his acts, it would be incompatible with the predestination of his acts. Similarly, if we declare that man is free in his acts, then this would imply that God has neither power over nor the knowledge of what man is going to do in his worldly life. The two alternatives create an embarrassment. One would like to attribute to God not only justice, but also omnipotence and omniscience. The Prophet Muhammad ridicules this discussion, which will ever remain inconclusive, and he has formally ordered his adherents not to engage in it, adding: "**People before you have been led astray by this discussion.**" He recognizes for God, in all respect and reverence, the attribute of omnipotence - omniscience, and also affirms that man will be held responsible for his acts. He does not want to tie up one of these things with the other. In a way, he relegates this discussion to the level of the futility of knowing whether the hen came first or the egg..

157. Moreover, good and evil are relative terms. A tiger hunts a rabbit for food. What is good (sustenance) for one is evil (death) for the other. That is why the evil that seems to reach us is on account of our own nature, which merits or requires that "evil." That is also why it is for God to determine for whom a given act is good and for whom a given act is evil. Furthermore, it should be remembered that the conception of 'responsibility' is a this-worldly thing, whereas the 'Divine reward and punishment' belong to the other-worldly matters. We are shocked only when we relegate them both to the same level. To do so would be a fallacy.

158. Let us remember that it is this double belief in the omnipotence of God and the absolute individual responsibility of man which rouses a Muslim to action, even as it enables him to support easily an unavoidable misfortune. Far from creating in him an immobility, it gives him a dynamism. We have to refer to the exploits of the early Muslims, who were the best practitioners of the teaching of the Prophet, in order to convince ourselves of the truth of this statement.

Conclusion

159. This is a résumé practically of all that a Muslim has to believe. The whole formula of the creed is succinctly summed up in these two expressions: "***There is no God if not God Himself, and Muhammad is the messenger and slave-servant of God.***" This would serve to remind us

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

that Islam is not only a belief, but also a practice, spiritual as well as temporal. It is in fact a complete code of human life.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Chapter No: 05

Devotional Life and Religious Practices of Islam

It is the aim of Islam to offer a complete code of life without neglecting any one of the various domains of human activity. Its objective is to coordinate all these aspects. The concern for "centralization" is displayed in the fact that all Islamic practices touch simultaneously both the body and the soul. Not only do temporal practices acquire a sacred moral character when they conform to Divine prescriptions, but the spiritual practices also possess a material utility. The rules of conduct, whether spiritual or temporal, emanate from the one and the same source, the Qur'an, which is the Word of God. The ineluctable result is that, according to Islamic terminology, the *Imam* (supreme director or leader of the Muslim world) signifies not only the leader of the service of prayer in the mosque, but also the head of the Muslim state.

161. In a well-known saying, the Prophet Muhammad has defined faith (*Iman*), submission (*Islam*) and the best method (*Ihsan*) leading thereto. In order to elucidate the subject under discussion, it would most profitably suit our purpose to quote and comment on what he has said on the second point. He declared, "Submission to God (*Islam*) is that one should celebrate the services of worship, observe annual fasting, perform the *Hajj* (pilgrimage) and pay the *zakat*-taxes."

Service of Worship

162. "**Worship is the pillar of religion**" is a saying of the Prophet Muhammad. The Qur'an speaks of it more than a hundred times, and calls it variously *salat* (inclination), *du'a* (prayer, appeal), *dhikr*(remembrance), *tasbih* (glorification), *inabah* (returning, attachment), etc.

163. In its concern for creating an atmosphere of the sovereignty of God on earth, Islam has prescribed five services of worship daily (1) one should pray when one rises (and one should rise early) (2) early in the afternoon, (3) late in the afternoon (4) at sunset, and (5) at night before one goes to bed. This requires abandoning all material interests, during those few minutes spent in each service of worship, in order to provide proof of one's submission and gratitude to God our Creator. This applies to every adult, man or woman.

164. The early afternoon service is transformed every Friday into a weekly congregational service, with greater solemnity, in which the *Imam* of the locality delivers also a sermon before prayer. Islam has instituted two annual feasts: one at the end of the fasting month, and the other on the occasion of the pilgrimage to Mecca. These two feasts are celebrated by two special services of worship, in addition to the daily five. Thus, early in the morning people assemble for a collective service of prayer, after which the *Imam* delivers a sermon. Another service of prayer, of restricted obligation, is held for the deceased before burial.

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

165. To speak of the hidden meaning and mysterious effects of the service of worship, the great mystic Waliullah ad-Dihlawi said:

"Know that one is sometimes transported, quick as lightning, to the Holy Precincts (of the Divine Presence), and finds one's self attached, with the greatest possible adherence, to the threshold of God. There descend on this person the Divine transfigurations (*tajalli*) which dominate his soul. He sees and feels things which the human tongue is incapable of describing. Once this state of light passes away, he returns to his previous condition, and finds himself tormented by the loss of such an ecstasy. Thereupon he tries to rejoin that which has escaped him, and adopts the condition of this lowly world which would be nearest to a state of absorption in the knowledge of the Creator. This is a posture of respect, of devotion, and of an almost direct conversation with God, which posture is accompanied by appropriate acts and words ... Worship consists essentially of three elements: (1) humility of heart (spirit) consequent on a feeling of the presence of the majesty and grandeur of God, (2) recognition of this superiority (of God) and humbleness (of man) by means of appropriate words, and (3) adoption by the organs of the body of postures of necessary reverence. . . Still greater respect is displayed by laying down the face--which reflects in the highest degree one's ego and self-consciousness--so low that it touches the ground in front of the object of reverence. . . As a man can reach the top of his spiritual evolution only gradually, it is evident that such an ascension must pass through all the three stages; and a perfect service of worship would have three postures. Standing up, bowing down, and prostrating by laying the head on the ground in the presence of the Almighty; and all this is performed for the necessary evolution of the spirit so that one might feel truly the sublimity of God and the humbleness of man" (*Hujjatullah al Balighah*, vol. 1, Secrets of Worship).

166. In a passage (22/18), the Qur'an says: "*Hast thou not seen that before God are prostrate whosoever in the heavens and whosoever is on the earth, and the sun, and the moon, and the stars, and the hills, and the trees, and the beasts, and many of mankind...?*" Again (17/44): "*The seven heavens and the earth and all that is therein praise Him, and there is not a thing but hymneth His praise; but ye understand not their praise...*" The Islamic service of worship combines in fact the forms of worship of all creatures. The heavenly bodies (i.e., sun, moon and stars) repeat their act of rising and setting (like *rak'at* after *rak'at* of the service); the mountains remain standing (like the first act in the service); the beast remain bowed and bent (like the *ruku'* in the service); as for trees, we see that they get their food through their roots, which are their mouths, and this signifies that the trees are perpetually prostrate (like the *sajdah* or prostration in the Islamic service of worship). Further, according to the Qur'an (8/11), one of the principle functions of water is to purify (and compare the need of ablutions for the service). Another passage (13/13) says: "The thunder hymneth His praise," and this makes us think of the loud pronunciation of *Allaahu akbar*, so often repeated during the service, even if we disregard the loud recitation of the Qur'an during the service, which is done during certain services and not in others. The birds flying in flocks worship God (Qur'an 24/41), as also Muslims do when celebrating their congregational service. Just as the shadow stretches and shortens in the course of its daily life (which is its particular way of submission to and worship of God, cf. Qur'an 13/15, 16/18), so does the human worshipper stretch or shorten himself while standing, bowing, prostrating or sitting in the course of the service. The above-mentioned acts

Mega Lecture

of different creatures have been adapted and assimilated therein, adding thereto what is particular to man but not found in other creatures.

166/a. It may be recalled that the Islamic word for the service of worship is *'ibaadah*, which is from the same root as *'abd* (i.e., slave). In other words, worship is what the slave does, the service is what the master desires of him. God demands that the mountains stand, and that beasts remain bent. That is their service . . . their worship. To everyone that which suits him and that which his lord desires of him. Of course to man is also that which becomes him as a rational being, as the foremost of creatures . . . as the vice-regent of God.

166/b. Ablution or ritual washing and physically being clean is a pre-requisite for the validity of a Service of Worship. A Muslim philosopher has nicely brought its significance into relief. For this ritual purification one has to wash the hands, the mouth, the nose, the face, the arms, the head, the ears and the feet. Washing them is not merely for outward cleanliness, because it is also a repentance for the past and a resolution for the future. Repentance washes away past sins, and resolution through invoking the help of God concerning what is yet to come in life (and this relates to our principal organs of mischief). The hand attacks, the mouth talks, the nose smells, the face or presence [self] abuses the prestige and exerts influence and pressure, the arms hold, the head thinks and plots, the ears hear, the feet march in the way of evil, forbidden by God. Not to speak of sexual sins, from which one gets rid even before beginning the ablutions, and one has to clean in W.C. [water closet/bathroom]. This mystical and symbolic aspect of purification is evident in the formulas of invocations which accompany the washing of each organ. In the W.C. we say: "O God, purify my heart from hypocrisy, and my sex from shameful acts and fornication." One begins the formulation of the intention of the ablutions by saying: "Praise be to God Who has made water pure and purifying." When washing the face, one prays to God: "Brighten my face on Doomsday, and do not darken it;" for washing the arms: "Employ me in good deeds and not in evil ones, give me my book in my right hand and not in my left on Doomsday, and make my reckoning easy and do not make it difficult." For the head: "Teach me useful knowledge." For the ears: "Let me listen to Thy word and the word of Thy messenger." And for the feet: "Make my feet firm on the path when crossing over Hell, and do not let them stumble on the day when the feet of Thy friends will remain firm and the feet of Thy enemies will stumble."

MegaLecture

167. The five daily services were made obligatory for Muslims on the occasion of the ascension of the Prophet (*mi'raj*). The Prophet Muhammad has moreover declared that the service of worship of a believer is his own ascension, in which he is raised into the presence of God. These are no empty words; let us look at what a Muslim does in his worship. First of all, he stands up, holds up his hands, and proclaims: "God alone is great;" thus he renounces all except God, and submits himself to the will of his Lord alone. After having hymned and recalled the merits of God, he feels so humble before the Divine majesty that he bows low and puts down his head as a sign of reverence, proclaiming, "Glory to my Lord Who alone is Majestic." Then he stands erect to thank God for having guided him, and in his mind of minds he is struck so much by the greatness of God that he feels impressed to prostrate himself and to place his forehead on the ground in all humility and declare, "Glory to my Lord Who alone is High." He

repeats these acts so that the body gets accustomed to the spiritual exercise and gradually becomes worthier and worthier so as to be lifted from the world of matter and pass through the heavenly atmosphere and enter the presence of God. There he salutes God and receives the answer to his greetings. In fact, he employs for the purpose the very formulae that were used during the Ascension of the Prophet Muhammad when he exchanged greetings with God: "The blessed and purest of greetings to God--Peace with thee, O Prophet, and the mercy and blessings of God--Peace with us and with all the pious servants of God." Without material, idol-like symbols, the believer travels, so to say, towards the transcendent God, on a spiritual journey which, in certain communities, is termed "communion".

168. Such is the spiritual significance of the service of worship. As for its material utilities, these again are numerous. Five times a day it assembles the inhabitants of a locality, providing the opportunity for relaxation for a little while during the course of the monotonous duties in individual avocations, and gathers the highest as well as the lowest personalities of the place in perfect equality (for it is the chief of the locality who will conduct the prayer; and in the metropolis, at the central mosque, it is the head of the state himself who performs this duty). Thus one meets not only other members of the community, but also responsible functionaries, and approaches them directly without formality or hindrance. The social aspect of the service of prayer is that the believer feels around him the sovereignty of God, and lives in a state of military discipline. At the call of the *muezzin*, all rush to the place of assembly, stand in serried [pressed together without gaps] ranks behind the leader, doing acts and carrying on movements in common with others, in perfect uniformity and co-ordination. Further, the faithful in all parts of the globe turn their faces, during the service of worship, towards the same focal point, the Ka'bah or the House of God in Mecca. This reminds them of the unity of the world community of Muslims, without distinction of class, race, or region.

169. A formal and more preferable way of worship is the congregational service. In the absence of such a possibility, or lacking adequate facilities, one prays alone and individually, man or woman. The five prayers of the day require a minimum duty which take about 24 minutes, during the course of 24 hours, in the presence and remembrance of God but the believer must actually remember God every moment - at work, in bed or while engaged in any occupation. The Qur'an (3/190-1) says: "...*men of understanding, who remember God standing, sitting, and reclining, and consider the creation of the heavens and the earth, (and say) Our Lord! Thou didst not create this in vain...*" God has made the universe subservient to use and for benefit of man, but the enjoyment must be accompanied by recognition (gratitude) and obedience, and not by rebellion against God and injustice against our fellow-beings.

170. It may be mentioned here that at the very moment when the service of prayer was instituted, the Qur'anic verse (2/286) was revealed: "*God tasketh not a soul beyond its scope.*" **It is the intention and will that counts in the eyes of God, and not the quantity or the exterior method of accomplishing a thing.** If a devout man honestly believes that he is unable to perform the service of prayer five times daily, let him observe it four times, thrice, twice or even a single time every day, according to his opportunities and circumstances, and the duration of the hindrance. The essential point is that one should not forget one's spiritual duty in

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

the midst of material and mundane preoccupations. Such a reduction is permitted in abnormal conditions, such as when one is ill or has fits of unconsciousness, or unavoidable duties in the service of God as we infer from the practice of the Prophet himself. In fact, it is reported that in the course of the battle of Khandaq, it happened that the Prophet himself performed all these four services - *zuhr, asr, maghrib* and *'ishaa* - late in the night, because the enemy had not allowed a single moment's respite during the day to attend to prayer. This means twice the prayer during the day. Again, on the authority of Ibn 'Abbas, it is reported (see Bukhari, Muslim, Tirmidhi, Ibn Hanbal, Malik, and particularly *Sahih* of Muslim, kitab as-salaat, bab al-jam' bain as-salatain fi'l-hadr, No. 49, 50, 54) that "sometimes the Prophet combined*zuhr-'asr* and *maghrib-'ishaa* having neither fear (of enemy) nor (inconvenience of) travel; adding: and the Prophet wanted thereby that there should be no inconvenience for his community." This narration implies thrice the prayer during the day. Evidently all depends on the conscience of the individual faithful who is personally responsible to God Whom one cannot dupe and from Whom one cannot conceal anything. There is again the question of the timings. We know that there is a great difference in the rising and setting of the sun between normal (equatorial-tropical) countries and the regions situated beyond and extending to the two poles. Al-Biruni (cf. *al-Jamahir*) has observed that, at the poles, the sun remains set for six months continually, and then rises to shine continuously for six months (excepting the two days of the equinox). The jurist-theologians of Islam affirm in general that the hours at 45 parallel remain valid up to 90 parallel, i.e., up to the poles; and in the regions comprised between 45 and 90, one is to follow the movement of the clock and not that of the sun. This applies to worship as well as fasts and other similar duties.

171. Women are exempted from prayer-services during their monthly courses.

For the step by step procedure for performing the Service of Worship (Islamic Prayer/Salaat) click here.

The Fast

172. The second religious duty of a believer is the fasting for one month every year. One must abstain from eating, drinking and smoking (including inoculations and injections) during each day of the month of Ramadan. This requirement is from dawn to sunset in both the equatorial and tropical countries (and for an equivalent period in regions situated far away from the centre of the globe, calculated on the basis of the hours at 45 parallel, as we have just mentioned). Of the sick we shall speak later [*please see* 174]. It goes without saying that one must likewise abstain from thinking of carnal and other pleasures incompatible with the spiritual regimen. It is quite a rigorous discipline which may appear very difficult to the adherents of other religions; yet even the new converts get accustomed to it very soon if they show good will and inclination, as is evidenced by the experience of centuries.

173. The fast extends over a whole month; and as is well known, it is the purely lunar month which counts in Islam. The result is that the month of fasting, Ramadan, rotates turn by turn through all the seasons of the year, autumn, winter, spring and summer; and one gets

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Mega Lecture

accustomed to these privations in the burning heat of summer as well as the chilling cold of winter, and one undergoes all this as a spiritual discipline, in obedience to God. At the same time one derives temporal advantages from fasting that are connected with hygienic, military training, development of will power, among others, even as those resulting from the service of worship. More than anybody else, it is the soldiers, during sieges and other occasions of a war, who have to support the privations of food and drink and still continue their duty to defend. So the most stupid ruler or commander-in-chief would someone who hindered his militia from fasting in the month of Ramadan. But it must be repeated that, essentially and chiefly, the aim is a religious practice and a spiritual exercise enabling proximity to God. If one fasts for temporal motives only - under the prescription of a doctor, for instance - he will be far from accomplishing his religious duty and will not benefit spiritually at all.

174. As in the case of prayer, women are not required to fast during their feminine indispositions, yet with this difference that the defaulting days are to be made up later by an equal number of days of fasting. The same applies to the sick. As to the very old, he need not fast, yet if he has means he must feed a poor for each day of the fasts of Ramadan.

175. It may be recalled that the Prophet forbade fasts extending over several days continuously (for 48 hours or 72 hours, for instance), over the whole year, or during the whole life, even to those who longed to do so in their zeal for spiritual practices to obtain increased benefit. He remarked: "**Thou hast obligations even with regard to thine own self**." In addition to the obligatory fast of Ramadan, one may fast if one likes, as a work of supererogation, from time to time. For this voluntary fast, the Prophet has recommended fasting for two days at a time. From the medical point of view, one notes that fasting eternally becomes a habitual, which does not produce the same effect as fasting at intervals. To fast for less than a month does not produce great effect, yet a fast for more than 40 days becomes a habit.

175/a. It is a myth to say that fasting in cold climates is contrary to the requirements of human health. Biological observations have shown that wild beasts get practically nothing to eat especially when it snows. They sleep or otherwise pass their time "fasting," and get rejuvenated at the approach of spring. The same is true with trees as well. In winter they lose all their leaves and become dormant, and do not receive sustenance. Then after a few months of "fasting," they become rejuvenated in the spring and become more vigorous than ever, as is evidenced by their new luxurious bloom and foliage. And so, like all animal organs, the digestive apparatus also requires a rest. Fasting is the only conceivable method for it. Now-a-days, a new school of medicine has come into existence in all the western countries which treats particularly chronic diseases by short or long periods of fasting.

175/b. It is an antique notion in human society to offer the tithe of one's gains to God - the tithe of the harvest is an example. Fasting is offers the tithe of our meals to God. A parallel notion (endorsed by the Qur'an 6/160: "*Whoso bringeth a good deed will receive tenfold the like thereof*") is that a good deed is rewarded ten times as much by God. That explains the saying of the Prophet: "**Whoever fasts the month of Ramadan and six more days in the following month, Shawwal, it will be as if he had fasted the whole year.**" In fact, the lunar year

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

employed in Islam has 355 days, and the lunar month is sometimes 29 and sometimes 30 days. So a Muslim fasts every year for 35 or 36 days, which is worth tenfold, i.e., 350 or 360 days, the average being 355, which is the number of days in the lunar year.

176. Mystics have observed that a high-spirited animal nature hinders the perfection of the human spirit. In order to subjugate the body to the spirit, it is necessary to break the force of the body and increase that of the spirit. It has been found that nothing is as effective for this purpose as hunger, thirst, renunciation of carnal desires and the control of the tongue, the heart (mind) with its thought and other organs. One of the aspects of individual perfection is the subordination of animal nature to reason and the spirit. Nature sometimes rebels, whereas its behaviour at other times is one of submissiveness. One therefore needs these hard practices, such as fasting, in order to keep animality in check . Penitence and mortification through fasting may bring solace and purify the soul if one commits sins, They also fortify the will so that one will not indulge in vice again. If has already been stated that neither drinking nor eating is a trait of the angels. So by imposing this regimen, man will makes himself resemble the angels more and more. Also, since his actions are intended to conform with the God's commands, he approaches nearer to Him and obtains His pleasure thereby - and that is the ultimate aim of man.

The Hajj

177. *Hajj* literally means a travel (i.e., towards God) as also an effort to dominate something (the self, in this connection). Most often this term is translated as 'pilgrimage,' although it is far from giving the exact significance of the word *hajj*. This is the third of the religious duties of a Muslim. It is obligatory on every adult, man or woman, to go once in his or her lifetime to Mecca in order to perform there the great *Effort* for annihilating the ego (*fana'*), i.e., assimilating one's self with the will of God. Those who do not possess the material means of travel are exempted from it. But which Muslim would not collect, little by little, the necessary amount for being one day able to visit the centre of his religion, the Ka'bah or the House of God? The Qur'an (3:96) does not exaggerate when it says that this is the oldest House in the world dedicated by mankind to God and to the cult of monotheism. If one were to think only of Abraham - who, according to Islamic tradition, simply restored of the building erected originally by Adam - it would still be older than the temple of Jerusalem which was constructed by Solomon. No other place of worship older than the Ka'bah in Mecca is known to be still functioning.

178. The rites of the *Hajj* may briefly be noted. At the borders of the sacred territory around Mecca, one puts off the ordinary dress and puts on, by way of a religious uniform, two sheets of cloth - a loin cloth and a shoulder cover. This dress is required only of men and not of women. He is bareheaded, and one tries to forget one's self during the several days of the *Hajj*. He goes to 'Arafat, in the suburbs of Mecca, to pass there the day in meditation. Towards evening, he returns, passes the night at Muzdalifah, and early next morning arrives at Mina which is on the outskirts of Mecca. There he passes three days, during which he lapidates [throws stones] Satan every morning, sacrifices a goat, pays a short visit to Ka'bah for performing the ritual

Mega Lecture

sevenfold circumambulation and running through the hills of Safa and Marwah in front of the Ka'bah. The symbolic background may also be described as follows:

179. After their fall from Paradise, Adam and Eve were separated and lost. They searched for each other, and by the grace of God met together at 'Arafat. In gratitude to God, the descendants of Adam and Eve turn to Him, make an effort to forget themselves and be assimilated with the Divine Presence, with a view to entreat His pardon for their shortcomings in the past and His help for the future.

180. As to the lapidation of Satan, it may be recalled that when Abraham claimed to love God above everything else, God demanded of him as a proof the immolation of his beloved son. To add to this trial, Satan went first to Abraham to dissuade him from his resolution - and they say that this happened at Mina - but Abraham chased Satan away every time by pelting stones at him. Then he went to Hagar, and lastly to Ishmael himself. Each one of them did the same. So one repeats these acts symbolically, and resolves to fight diabolic temptations.

181. The visit to the "House of God" is self-explanatory. To give evidence of obedience, one goes there with respect and in humility. It is a very old custom to circumambulate a thing for showing one's readiness to sacrifice one's self for the object of devotion and care and love.

181/a. The Black Stone requires a particular mention on account of the many misunderstandings on its score. It is not a meteorite, but simply a black stone. Its practical importance is to show the starting point of the circumambulation, and by its colour it is conspicuous in the building. Secondly, this stone is not worshipped, nor do Muslims prostrate in the direction of this stone, prostration being done towards any and every part of the building of the Ka'bah, and more often than not, one turns to directions besides the Black Stone (al-Hajar al-Aswad). It may be recalled that once when the Qaramitah ravaged Mecca and they carried the Black Stone to their country as booty and it remained there for many years. During the course of its absence, Muslims did not turn to the place where it was kept (in 'Uman), but continued to turn towards the Ka'bah in Mecca. Even the building of the Ka'bah is not essential. For instance, if it is demolished for repairs or new construction, Muslims will turn to the same spot, whether the Ka'bah and its Black Stone is there or not. As has been said, the practical importance of the Black Stone is that it indicates the point from which the circumambulation begins and at which it ends although it has a symbolical significance too. In one Hadith, the Prophet had named it the "right hand of God" (*yamin-Allah*), and for a reason. In fact, one advances there one's hand to conclude the pact, and God obtains in return our pact of allegiance and submission. In the Quranic terminology, God is the king, and He has not only His treasures and His armies, but also His realm. In the realm there is a metropolis (*Ummal qurra*) and in the metropolis naturally is a palace (Bait-Allah, home of God). If a subject wants to testify to his loyalty, he has to go to the royal palace and conclude personally the pact of allegiance. The right hand of the invisible God must be visible symbolically. And that is the *al-Hajar al-Aswad*, the Black Stone of the Ka'bah.

Mega Lecture

182. With regards to covering the ground between Safa and Marwah seven times, it is related that when Abraham left his wife Hagar and the suckling Ishmael in the desolate and uninhabited site of Mecca, where the provision of water was soon exhausted. So Hagar ran hither and tither, driven by maternal affection, to search for some water for her thirst-stricken baby. Then the spring of Zamam gushed forth. So one repeats this act in the same place where Hagar did it, to pay homage to maternal love and in thanksgiving for the God's mercy.

183. The social aspect is not less striking. The world brotherhood of Muslims manifests itself there in the most vivid manner. The believers, without distinction of race, language, birthplace or even class, feel the obligation to go there and to mix with one another in a spirit of fraternal equality. They camp together in the desert, and perform their religious duties in common. For several days, at fixed hours, they march, make a halt, pass the night under tents or in bivouac - all this, to an even greater extent than the five daily prayer-services, trains the solider of God for a life of discipline.

183/a. When the Prophet Muhammad performed his own *Hajj* a few months before his demise, he uttered a sermon from above the *Hill of Mercy* (Jabal ar-Rahman) which constitutes the charter of Humanity in Islam. Some 140,000 Muslims came that year from all parts of Arabia to listen to this testament of their Prophet, which may be analysed as follows: (1) he reminded them of the basic elements of Islam, *viz*., belief in the One God with no icons or other material representation (2) all Muslims were equal without discrimination on account of race or class, with there being no superiority to one over any other except by the individual excellence of piety and fear of God (3) three fundamental rights were sacrosanct for each and every human being concerning (i) his person, (ii) his property and (iii) his honour (4) prohibition of interest transactions, whether the interest is large or small (e) prohibition of vendettas and private justice (5) obligation to treat women well (6) constant redistribution and circulation of the private wealth so as to avoid its accumulation in the hands of a few (through the law of obligatory inheritance, restrictions on wills and prohibition of interest, etc.) and (7) emphatic restatement that the Divine Revelation alone should be the source of law for our conduct in all walks of life. The pilgrims are made to hear this same sermon every year, recited from the same sacred Hill of Mercy at 'Arafat.

MegaLecture

184. There is reason to believe that a pre-Islamic practice was continued during the *Hajj* festivities, at least for the early generations of Muslims. It profited by a vast assembly where an annual literary congress was organized. Here poets "published" their new compositions; orators made harangues before the spellbound masses gathered there to display their talents; professional wrestlers fascinated the spectators; and traders brought merchandise of all sorts. Caliph 'Umar gave it a most salutary administrative character, for this was an occasion for him to hold sessions of an appeals court against his governors and commanders along with public consultation on important projects in view. Let us recall once again that in Islam, the sacred and the profane, the spiritual and the temporal, both live in co-existence and even in harmonious collaboration.

The Zakat-Tax

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

185. In modern times, the man in the street understands by *zakat* a certain percentage of his hoarded cash which is to be given to the poor every year. But in the Qur'an, in the Hadith and in the practice of the early centuries of Islam, the *zakat* (also called *sadaqat* and *haqq*)[(1)] meant all sorts of tax perceived by the Muslim State on its Muslim subjects i.e., tax on agricultural product, on sub-soil exploitation, on commercial capital, on herds of domesticated animals living on public pastures, on hoarded cash, etc. In the beginning, all these taxes were paid directly to the government, but later, during his caliphate, 'Uthman decided that Muslims could spend directly the tax on the hoarded cash to its beneficiaries prescribed by the Qur'an (9/60) without the intermediary of the government.

185/a. The Qur'an (4/5) recognizes that wealth is the basis and the essential means of the subsistence of humanity. Therefore it should not be surprising that payment of tax to the government has been raised by the Prophet to the dignity of an article of faith and one of the four fundamental rites of religion, along with prayer, fasting and pilgrimage. In Islam one does not pay a "tribute" to the chief of the city for his personal luxury and vanity, but one pays his dues, as a right connected with the collectivity, and more particularly in favour of the needy. This is for the purpose of "growing" and "purifying" one's self, as is the etymological sense of the term *zakat*. The Prophet Muhammad said, "**The chief of a people is in fact their servant.**" In order to demonstrate the truth of this saying, and the absolute disinterestedness with which he had assumed the direction of his people, both as a spiritual guide and the head of the State, the Prophet formally declared that the revenues of the Muslim State, coming from Muslim taxpayers, were religiously forbidden to him and to all members of his tribe. If the head of the State does not abuse public confidence, it follows that his subordinates must be scrupulous in the performance of their duties.

186. In the time of the Prophet and the Orthodox Caliphs, there was in the Muslim State no tax on Muslims other than the *zakat*. Far from being an almsgiving, it constituted a State-tax, an obligatory contribution fixed in quantity and in epoch, levied by sanctions and coercion from the recalcitrants. In order to best inculcate the importance of these payments in the spirit of the faithful, the Prophet declared that the *zakat*was a religious duty and a Divine prescription, on par with the belief in One God, the service of prayer, the fasting and the *Hajj*. If belief is a spiritual duty, and prayer, fasting and *Hajj* are bodily duties, the payment of the *zakat* is a fiscal duty. The jurists call it *'ibadat maliyah* (worship of God by means of property). This is another proof - if there is need of one - of the fact that Islam co-ordinates the entire human life into a single whole for the purpose of creating a harmonious equilibrium between body and soul, without either favouring or treating with disdain any of these two elements of the human constitution.

187. The Qur'an employs various terms to designate the tax (i) *zakat* - used in numerous verses, which means both growth and purification. It connotes that one must pay part of one's growing wealth in order to purify it. (ii) *sadaqat* (Qur'an 9/60) - signifies both truth and charity, implying that to be true to humanity, one must be charitable towards the less fortunate. (iii) *haqq* or right. It is the right of others, it also entails duty on the one who possesses (rights and duties being correlative terms, and collaboration being the basis of all functioning of society.)

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

188. There are taxes on savings, on harvests, on merchandise, on herds of cattle pasturing in public meadows, on mines, on maritime products, etc. The tariffs may differ, yet all are called *zakat*, *sadaqat* and other synonymous names variously.

189. The tariffs of the time of the Prophet seem not to have been considered rigid nor incapable of modification. We have already mentioned that the Prophet himself exempted the inhabitants of Ta'if from the*zakat* (with some other examples for other regions also). As Abu 'Ubaid records, the great caliph 'Umar reduced the duties on important of victuals in Madinah. In the lifetime of the Prophet, there were occasions when he was obliged to appeal for extraordinary contributions - for instance, the defence of the country against a foreign menace. This has enabled the jurists to conclude that the government may impose new provisional taxes, called *nawa'ib*, or augment the rates for the duration of the crisis. The silence of the Qur'an on the items and rates of taxation confirms this deduction of the jurists.

190. But the Qur'an speaks in detail about the expenditure of the State and the principal heads of the government budget:

*"The **sadaqat** (tax levied on Muslims) are only for the needy and the poor, and those who work (for these State revenues), and those whose hearts are to be won, and for (freeing) the necks, and the heavily indebted, and ind the path of God, and for the wayfarers: - a duty imposed by God, and God is the Knower, the Wise"* (Q. 9/60).

As stated above, *sadaqat* and *zakat* are synonymous and this means that what is perceived on a Muslim subject and what is perceived on a non-Muslim, such as *Kharaj, jizyah, ghanimah*, etc., is not included in*zakat*. The beneficiaries of the two also differ considerably.

191. While other legislators would rather prescribe rules for income, the Qur'an, on the contrary, formulates the principles of State expenditure only. In the eight categories of beneficiaries of *the zakat*, of whom the verse speaks, it will be noted that there is no mention of the Prophet. Some remarks may be useful for the better understanding of the range and extent of this verse, which speaks of certain exclusive recipients.

192. According to such a great authority as the Caliph 'Umar, the needy (*fuqara*) are those of the Muslim community and the poor (*masakin*) - almost an equivalent - are the poor among the non-Muslim inhabitants (the protected persons). It is to be noted that the *sadaqat* do not include revenues coming from non-Muslims, yet Islam includes them among the beneficiaries of the taxes paid by the Muslims.

193. Those who work for the revenues are the collectors, accountants, those in charge of the expenditure, controllers and auditors - this list practically embraces the entire administration - both civil and military, of the State, in view of the fact that the beneficiaries of these revenues include practically all departments of administration.

194. Those whose hearts are to be won are of many kinds. The great jurist Abu Ya'la al-Farra' (al-Ahkam as-Sultaniyah, p. 116) points out: "As for those whose hearts are to be won, they are

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

of four kinds: (1) those whose hearts are to be reconciled for coming to the aid of the Muslims; (2) those whose hearts are to be won in order that they might abstain from doing harm to Muslims; (3) those who are attracted towards Islam; and (4) those by whose means conversion to Islam becomes possible for the members of their tribes. It is lawful to benefit each and every one of these categories of 'those whose hearts are to be won,' be they Muslims or polytheists."

195. By the term "freeing the necks," one has always understood the emancipation of the slaves and the ransoming of the prisoners of war made by an enemy. A word about the slaves may not be out of place. No religion before Islam seems to have paid attention to the amelioration of the condition of the slaves. The Prophet of Islam forbade altogether the enslavement of the Arabs as Sarakhsi records. As to other peoples, the Qur'an (24/33) orders that if a well-behaving slave is prepared to pay off his value to his master, the latter cannot refuse the offer. In fact, he will be constrained by the court to grant his slave opportunities to earn and save the necessary amount for obtaining manumission [freeing a slave] and would be exempted from serving his master in the meantime. Further, as we have just seen, the Muslim government allots a sum in the annual budget for the aid of the slaves desiring emancipation. The object of permitting slavery in Islam is not the exploitation of an unfortunate fellow-being. Far from that, its aim is first to provide shelter to those prisoners of war who have lost everything, and for some reason or other are not repatriated. Secondly to educate them and give them the opportunity to acquire culture in an Islamic surrounding, under the government of God. Slaves are obtained **only through legitimate war**, waged by a government. Private razzias, kidnapping or even sale of infants by their parents have no legal sanction whatsoever.

196. Aid to those who are heavily indebted or have too great a charge may take different shapes. We see Caliph 'Umar organized a service of interest-free loans also.

197. "In the path of God" includes every charitable cause. The jurists have not hesitated to start with military equipment for the defence of Islam, since **Islam struggles only and solely for the establishment of the Kingdom of God on earth**.

198. As for the "wayfarers," one can help them not only by giving them hospitality, but also by ensuring their health and comfort and their security of routes as well as the adoption of measures for the well-being of those who have to pass through a place other than their own, whether they be native or alien, Muslim or non-Muslim. 198/a. After having detailed the facts concerning religious practices, it may not be out of place to repeat that the development of the whole and the co-ordination of all parts is the basic principle governing the Islamic way of life. The Qur'an repeats often: "*Establish worship and pay zakat-tax*." What could be a better manifestation of this unity of body and soul than the fact that the worship of the One God and payment of the duty towards society are commanded in one and the same breath! Spiritual duties are not devoid of material advantages, and temporal duties have also their spiritual values. Again, all are dependent on the intentions and motives that govern one's performance of those duties.

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Chapter No: 06

The Cultivation of Spiritual Life

ISLAM envisages for man a discipline for his life as a whole, material as well as spiritual. But there is no denying the fact that owing to differences of individual temperaments, certain people would specialize in certain specialties and not in others. Even if one were to concentrate on the spiritual side of one's existence, he would still remain more or less attached to the other occupations of life for his nourishment, for the sake of society of which he is a member, and so on.

200. In his celebrated exposé of his teaching on faith and submission and the best method of these two, the Prophet Muhammad defined this last point in the following terms: "**As to the embellishment (*ihsan*) of conduct, so render thy service unto God as if thou seest Him: even though thou doest not see Him, yet He seeth thee**." This beautification, the best and most beautiful method of devotion or service unto God, is the spiritual culture of Islam. "Service unto God" is a most comprehensive term, and includes not merely the cult, but also relates to human conduct throughout life. The most cultured from the spiritual point of view, are those who abide most closely by the will of God in all their acts, thoughts and beliefs.

201. Questions concerning this discipline form the subject matter of mysticism. The term 'mysticism' has several synonyms in Islam: ***Ihsan*** (which we find also used in the above-mentioned exposé of the Prophet), ***Qurb***(or approaching God), ***Tariqat*** (road, i.e., of the journey unto God), ***Suluk*** (journey, i.e. unto God), ***Tasawwuf*** (which etymologically means: to put on a woollen cloth). This last term is, curiously enough, the most currently used.

202. It is true that Muslim mystics - even as their counterparts in other civilizations - are not very eager to divulge their practices and their peculiarities to those outside the restricted circle of their disciples or confreres. This is not because there are scandalous secrets, but probably because of the fear that the man in the street may not understand why they undergo so much "useless" pain by renouncing the amenities of life; and also because ordinary people do not believe in the personal experiences of the mystics. So the mystics think, it is better to conceal them from those who are unable to appreciate them. Incidentally it also happens that if a thing is enshrouded in secrecy, it becomes so much more cherished by those who ignore it, yet are in search of it.

203. Differences of individual temperaments have existed in the human race at all times. It goes to the credit of Islam that it has discovered certain things which it could impose on each and every person, irrespective of temperament, a minimum necessary to be shared and practised in common. This minimum necessity simultaneously not only touches spiritual but also material needs. In order to understand it well, it may be noted that all agree that the best Muslims are the immediate disciples of the Prophet, namely his companions. A study of their lives shows that from the very start they were possessed of a variety of temperaments. There was Khalid, a

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

warrior, an intrepid soldier, on whom the Prophet was pleased, in admiration, to confer the title of "the Sword of God". There were 'Uthman and Ibn 'Awf, who were rich merchants, and the Prophet had announced the good tidings that they too belonged to the people of the Paradise. There was also Abu Dharr who detested all property, and preferred an ascetic life of mortification. We may recall a Bedouin nomad, who had visited the Prophet one day, in order to learn what were the minimum duties to merit Paradise. The Prophet had replied: **Faith in the One God, prayers five times a day, fast during the whole month of Ramadan, and the pilgrimage and payment of *zakat*-tax if one had means thereto**. The Bedouin embraced Islam, and burst forth: By God! I shall do nothing more and nothing less. When he departed, the Prophet remarked: **Whoever wishes to see a man of Paradise, let him look at him**! (cf. Bukhari and Muslim). Be it the warrior Khalid, or the wealthy 'Uthman, they never neglected the essential duties of Islam and its spirituality. Similarly Abu Dharr, Salman, Abu'd-Darda' and others who liked asceticism, did not obtain permission from the Prophet to lead, for instance, lives of recluses, to fast perpetually, to get castrated in horror of carnal pleasures, etc. On the contrary, the Prophet enjoined them to marry, and added:**Thou hast obligations even with regard to thy own body**.' (cf. lbn Hanbal), According to Islam, one does not belong to one's self, but to God; and it is not permitted to misuse the trust which God has reposed in us in the shape of our persons.

The *Suffah*

204. In the grand mosque of Madinah, there was in the time of the Prophet a special area called '*Suffah*' somewhat away from the prayer hall. This was a centre of training and education, functioning under the personal supervision of the Prophet himself. A considerable number of Muslims occupied it. They devoted part of their time, during the day, to learn the Islamic way of life, not only in matters of man's relation with God, but also with other members of society. They also worked to earn their bare necessaries of life, so that they might not become parasites and a burden on others. During the night, they passed their time, like the best mystics, in the observance of supererogatory (*nafal*) prayers and in meditation on God. Whether one calls this institute a convent (a *Tekkeh*, a *Khanqah*) or by any other name, there is no doubt that the inmates of the *Suffah* were more attached to spiritual practices than to material avocations. Perhaps one will not be able to know the details of the practices which the Prophet had enjoined on these early Muslim mystics, which practices must have varied according to the temperament and capacities of each individual. Yet the object being determined, there was enough liberty to select lawful means leading thereto. It may be recalled, by the way, that the Prophet once said: "**Wisdom is the lost-property of the believer; wherever he should find it, he should recover it**" (cf. Tirmidhi, lbn Majah).

The Essence of Mysticism

205. Through mysticism, Islam envisages a rectitude of beliefs, embellishment or beautification of the acts of devotion, taking the life of the Prophet as a model to be followed in all activities of life, the amelioration of personal conduct, and the accomplishment of duties imposed by Islam.

Mega Lecture

206. It has nothing to do with the power to know invisible things, with performing miracles, or imposing one's will on others by mysterious psychic means; not even with asceticism, mortification, seclusion, meditation and the consequent sensations (which may sometimes be means, yet not ends; or even with certain beliefs regarding the person of God (pantheism, etc); much less with what the charlatans assert, that a mystic is above the Islamic law and the necessary minimum duties imposed by it.

207. For want of a better term, one might use the word 'mysticism' which in Islam means the method of the best individual behaviour, i.e., the means by which one acquires control over one's own self, the sincerity, the realization of the constant presence of God in all one's acts and thoughts, seeking to love God more and more.

208. In the Islamic teachings, there are certain 'external' duties, such as prayer-service, fast, charity, abstaining from evil and wickedness, etc. There are also 'internal' duties, such as faith, gratitude to God, sincerity, and freedom from egoism. Mysticism is a training for this latter aspect of life. However, even the motivation of external duties are for the purification of the spirit, which is the only means of eternal salvation. In general, the mystic develops by his spiritual practices certain of his faculties and talents, which appear to the average person as miraculous; but the mystic does not seek them - he even despises them. To know invisible things, even if that becomes possible for certain persons by certain practices, is not desirable for the mystic, for these constitute the secrets of God and their premature divulgation is harmful to man in the long run. That is why the mystic does not utilize such powers even if he comes to acquire them; his aim remains always the purification of the spirit, in order to become more agreeable to the Lord. The perfect man is he who beautifies not only his outer but also his inner self, or (as mystics say) his body and his heart. For the external aspect, there is the *Fiqh* or body of Muslim law which consists of rules for one's entire outer life, such as cult, contractual relations, penalties, etc. It is however the internal aspect which is the true subject matter of mysticism. The acts of prayer- service belong to the realm of *Fiqh*, but sincerity and devotion are inner things, and belong to mysticism. Let us recall in this connection two verses of the Qur'an: "*Successful indeed are the believers who are devout in their prayer-service*" (23 : 1-2), and "*Lo the hypocrites. . . when they stand up to worship they perform it languidly and in ostentation so as to be observed by men*" (4:142). The good and bad services of worship, indicated therein, give us a clue to the understanding of what Islam requires of its adherents in all activities of life.

208/a. Islamic tradition reserves to the caliph or the head of the Muslim State not only politics (including administration of justice). but also cult, i.e., the outward practice of the religion, such as service of worship, fasting, pilgrimage. All this falls under the purview of *Fiqh* (Muslim law) developed by the different schools. In this realm, monopoly of power has been jealously imposed, although this concerns the rather less important part of our life. Sectarian differences exist among Muslims, since the death of the Prophet, as to who had the right to succeed to the Prophet in the exercise of the power regarding politics and cult. Let us leave the decision to God on the Day of Judgement, and let us occupy ourselves with our future and the defence against the enemies of God. As to the inner life, which alone determines the salvation in the everlasting

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Hereafter, in this sphere there are no jealousies - several persons could and did succeed the Prophet simultaneously. If the Naqshbandiyah Order of mystics seeks its authority from the Prophet through Abu Bakr, the Qadiriyah and Suhrawardiyah orders for instance, do the same through 'Ali, and all this among the Sunnis to whom Abu Bakr alone was the immediate successor of the Prophet in the political field. This spiritual Realm, which unites Sunnis and Shi'as, is no vapid abstraction - it has its own full fledged administrative organisation. The existence of*abdal* and *autad* or spiritual governors and administrators is known on the authority of the Prophet himself, as we read by as early an author as Ibn Sa'd. A monograph of Suyuti has collected all the traditions of the Prophet on the subject of *qutb, abdal* and *autad*. One need not enter into details here.

Pleasure of God

209. The common folk desire that God should love them in a sort of one way traffic without their loving Him - that He should give them well-being without their obeying Him. The Qur'an (2:165) teaches: ". . .*those who believe are stauncher in their love for God*." Again, it indicates the traits of the best men and says (5:54): " . . . *a people whom He loveth and who love Him*."

210. Obtaining Divine pleasure is not analogous to the enjoyment of material comforts, which God may give a man in order to test his gratefulness. Sometimes a man remains deprived of these comforts so that his endurance and constancy may be tested. In both cases man must show his devotion and attachment to God. This necessitates, on the one hand, abnegation of the ego by getting absorbed in the will of God, and on the other, a constant feeling of the effective presence of God.

211. The philosophic conception of pantheism emanates from the necessity of "self-abnegation in God." For a mystic, the mere affirmation of this belief has no value, he aspires to assimilate it and feel it as a reality. Thus it is that the learned distinctions between pantheism in the sense of the unity of existence, and that of the unity of vision, or any other, are for a true mystic mere logomachy, [verbal disputation] which makes the eager traveller lose his track, and retards his arrival at his destination.

212. It may be recalled here that the Islamic notion of pantheism does not lead to the reunification of man with God. However close a man may approach God, there is still a distinction, a separation, and a distance between the Creator and the created. One abnegates one's ego, but not one's person. The higher the level we attain, the more does God speak with our tongue, act with our hand, and desire with our heart [(1)] (cf. Bukhari). There is an ascension and a journey of man towards God, but there is never a confusion between the two. Thus it is that a Muslim does not use the term 'communion,' which may imply a union and a confusion. The Muslims designate the spiritual journey by the term *mir'aj,* which means a ladder, an ascension, which varies according to individuals and their capacities. The highest imaginable level a human being can attain is the one that has been reached by the holy Prophet Muhammad. And this experience of his is also called *mi'raj.* So, in a state of consciousness and wakefulness, the Prophet had the vision (*ru'ya*) of being transported to heaven and graced with

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

the honour of the Divine Presence. Even there, in this state beyond time and space, the Qur'an (53:9) indicates formally that the distance between God and the Prophet, "*was of two bows' length or even nearer*," and this graphic description lays emphasis simultaneously on the closeness of proximity as well as the distinction between the two. The Prophet himself employed the term *mi'raj* in connection with the common faithful, when he indicated that "**The service of worship is the *mi'raj* of the believer**." Evidently to each according to his capacity and his merit.

213. The spiritual journey has a whole series of stages, and it is only gradually that one traverses them. In the life of the Prophet Muhammad, we see that he began with retreats in the cave of Hira: then came the Meccan period, in which there was in store for him suffering and self-abnegation for the sake of the Divine cause. It is only after the *Hijrah* that he permits himself (under Divine instructions always) to oppose injustice with force. It is quite possible that someone, who pretends to be a dervish, should only be so in appearance, being in reality a wolf disguised as a sheep. Similarly it is quite possible that a king, with all the powers and treasures accumulated in his hands, should still be in practice a saint, who does not at all profit by these things, but makes a great self-sacrifice, in the course of accomplishing his duties, by renouncing his personal comforts.

214. To break the ego, the first requirement is a feeling of humility, which should be developed. Pride is considered to be a sin against God. Based on a *Hadith*, al-Ghazali says, "ostentation is the worship of self, therefore it is really a kind of polytheism."

215. Temperaments differ, that is why the roads also are numerous. One insists on the need of a guide and master. One who has studied medicine privately, without passing through a period of apprenticeship or even attending the courses of study with proficient doctors, is not allowed to practise medicine. The cases are rare where one sees all one's defects. Rarer still are instances of people who correct themselves immediately. A master is necessary in the first instance to indicate to us our defects and also the way in which these are to be removed. There is a constant development and a perpetual evolution in the individual, and the master spares us a great deal of unnecessary effort. If one were not to profit by experiences of the past, and if each newborn were to recommence each new task by falling back on his own individual self, there would be no growth of culture and civilization - which may be defined as the accumulated knowledge and practice of generations of our ancestors. The pupil has a regard for the judgement and counsel of his master, that he never has for his comrades and equals. After theoretical studies, one passes through a probationary period, for learning their practical application. This is as true of the material sciences as of the spiritual ones. There are many things which one can never learn by mere reading or listening; their practical application under the supervision of an experienced master is always useful, if not indispensable. Furthermore, mere knowledge does not suffice, it should be assimilated and become second nature.

216. Mystics recommend four practices: eat less, sleep less, speak less and frequent people less. "Less" does not mean complete abnegation, which is sometimes impossible (such as is eating and sleeping), and always undesirable; there must always be moderation. One should

Mega Lecture

eat to live, not live to eat. To eat for the purpose of obtaining the energy to accomplish the will and the commandments of God, is an act of devotion. And to diminish nourishment and become weakened to the extent of diminishing spiritual productivity is a sin. Sleep is necessary for health, and is a duty imposed on man. But laziness, which causes us to remain in bed too long, affects our spiritual progress. Sleeping less does not mean spending more time attaining material needs, but in finding more time for the practices of devotion and piety. Speaking less means diminishing frivolous talk, and avoidance, if possible, of all evil talk. It is often our habit to give good counsel to others, but to forget to practise it ourselves. Frequenting people less, means refraining from unnecessary talk and wasting time in needless contacts. To do a good turn to others, and to be occupied with the realization of things which could procure the pleasure of the Lord are rather desirable frequentations. However, it should not be forgotten that the needs of the individuals differ according to their stage of evolution; one does not give the same advice to an expert master as to a young novice. Mundane frequentations often occasion temptations, wasting useful time, and the forgetting of our more important obligations. It may be permitted to add a fifth counsel: spend less, meaning on luxuries, flirtation, and personal pleasures. The amount thus saved could be used for purposes dear to us but for which we have no money (in our spend-thrift habits) to contribute our two cents. The five counsels may constitute five principles of economy in Islam, both spiritual and material.

Special Practices

217. One has to remember God at all times. The essential feature is remembering by the heart. But concentration not being constant one employs physical methods for strengthening the presence of the spirit, and focusing of thought on the Divine person. The Qur'an (33:41-2) says: "*O ye who believe! Remember God with much remembrance. And glorify Him early and late*." Again (3:191): "*such as remember God, standing, sitting and reclining and meditate on the creation of the heavens and the earth (and say:) our Lord, Thou createdst not this in vain; glory be to Thee; Preserve us from the doom of Fire.*" There are litanies, in which some formulas are repeated a number of times; there are prayers which one pronounces every day as a habit. This is done aloud or in a low voice, but all should be related invariably and always to God, to His person or to His attributes, and never to created beings. Even if the subject be the Prophet Muhammad, for gratitude and admiration, the approach should be always through God, and never praying to Muhammad himself independently to do something for us. For instance "O God, incline to Muhammad and take him into Thy protection," or "O God resuscitate Muhammad in the glorious place which Thou hast promised him, and accept his intercession in our favour," etc. For developing concentration of thought, the mystics sometimes live in seclusion, or retreat, stop respiration for moments, close the eyes, and concentrate on the throbbing of the heart while thinking of God, etc. They also say that there are three grades of remembrance of God - to remember only His name, to remember His person by means of and through His name, and to remember His person without having the need of His name or any other means. That these practices were recommended by the Prophet himself and that they are not of a foreign origin, it may be recalled that Abu Hurairah had a rosary, made of a thread, with 2,000 knots to serve as many beads, and he repeated a certain prayer on it every night, (Ibn Fadlallah al-'Umari, Masalik al-Absar, vol. 5 MS. of Istanbul).

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

218. Among other practices, one may mention a life of asceticism, self-mortification, and meditation particularly on death and the final judgement. For Islam these are not ends, but only the means, rather temporary and provisional, for the purpose of mastering and breaking the ego. Everything that one permits to one's self in this world is divided into two categories - necessities and luxuries. One can never renounce the necessities, for that would be suicide. To commit suicide is religiously forbidden in Islam, for we do not belong to ourselves, but to God; and to destroy something before its full-fledged realization is to go against the will of God. As for luxuries, if they are not made the aim of our existence in this world, they are lawful. One can renounce them in order to dominate over one's animality. One can also do so in order to help those who do not possess even the necessities of life, or perhaps as a penitence. But it is not permitted to act in an exaggerated manner or out of all proportion. A virile man who makes an effort to lead a chaste life has greater merit than the one who destroys his desires by means, for instance, of a surgical operation. One who has no capacity for evil has no merit in comparison with the one who has the most perfect capacity for it and yet abstains voluntarily from it, for fear of God.

219. Self-mortification, abstinence and other spiritual practices enhance certain faculties, yet the acquisition of such faculties, however miraculous they might be, is not the aim of one who travels toward God. One seeks to realize acts, but not the sensations which are produced thereby automatically. Even an infidel may acquire certain of the faculties of saints, yet without the ultimate salvation. The mystic is continually directed towards his destination, and does not think of, much less profit by, these incidents of the saintly journey.

220. The life of a Sufi, dervish or mystic begins with repentance for past sins and the reparation, as far as possible, of harms done to other people. God pardons harms done to His own rights, but not those to the rights of other creatures; it is these latter who alone can pardon. It is only then that one can march on the path leading to the Lord. It is not the monopoly of any person or class or caste. It is within the reach of everybody, and it is the duty of each and everyone to take this road. The provisions for this journey are two-fold -- obedience to God and constantly remembering Him. Obedience is easier in the sense that one knows what one has to do and what the will of the Lord is. He has revealed His will and His prescriptions through His chosen prophets, in order that they communicate them to the common folk.

221. God has sent innumerable prophets. If their teachings differ in detail, it is not because God has changed His opinion, but only because, in His mercy and wisdom, the evolution or deterioration of the human capacities necessitated a change in the rules of conduct and in the details. Although in the essentials of their teachings, particularly in those which concern the relation of man with God, prophets do not differ, (and the Qur'an lays a strong emphasis on it) it is part of the obedience of man to God's orders to abide by the latest disposition of His will. If God taught men something through the prophet Abraham, for instance, it will not be disobedience to abandon it for abiding by the teachings of the prophet Moses, because he brought in his time the latest disposition of the orders of the same Law-giver. What is more, to neglect the directions of Moses and continue to practise the teachings of Abraham would be flagrant disobedience to God. It is thus that man should practise, turn by turn, the messages of

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

God brought by successive prophets, the latest of whom being Muhammad. It is thus that with all his respect for the previous prophets, a Muslim cannot abide except by the latest disposition of the will of God communicated to man. A Muslim venerates the Torah, the Psalter and the Gospel as the word of God, yet he abides by the latest and the most recent of the words of God, namely the Qur'an. Whoever remains attached to the preceding laws, cannot be considered, by the Legislator, as law-abiding and obedient.

Conclusion

222. Man being composed simultaneously of body and soul, of an outer and an inner existence, the harmonious progress and balanced evolution towards perfection require that attention should be paid to both these aspects of man. Mysticism or spiritual culture in Islam envisages the diminution of the Ego and the ever increasing realization of the presence of God. To be absorbed in the will of God does not at all mean an immobility; far from that. In innumerable verses, the Qur'an urges man to action and even to compete in the search for the Divine pleasure by means of good actions. Not to follow one's own evil desires, but to abide by the will of God alone, does not lead to inaction. Only that happens which God wills. Yet not knowing the will of God, which remains concealed from men, man must always continue his effort, even though failure follows failure, when trying to attain the goal which he conscientiously believes to be good and in conformity with the revealed commandments of God. This notion of a dynamic predestination, which urges one to action and resignation to the will of God, is well explained in the following verses of the Qur'an (57: 22-2?): "*Naught of disaster befalleth on the earth or in your souls but it is in a Book (Prescription) before We bring in into being - lo! that is easy for God - that ye grieve not for the sake of that which hath escaped you, nor ye exult because of that which ye had been given; God loveth not prideful boasters*." Man should always think of the grandeur of God, and vis-à-vis this, of his own humility, as well as of the day of the Resurrection when the Lord will demand individual accounts. The Qur'an says (29:69): "*As for those who strive in Us, We surely guide them to Our paths, and lo! God is with the good*."

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Chapter No: 07

The System of Morality in Islam

MEN may be divided into three principal categories:

(1) Those who are good by nature, and incorruptible in the face of temptations, whose very instinct suggests to them whatever is good and charitable.
(2) Those who are just the contrary and are incorrigible.
(3) Those who belong to the intermediary group, and behave suitably if they are constrained thereto by supervision or sanction, but who would otherwise lapse into a state of carelessness or do injustice to others.

224. This last category comprises the immense majority of the human race, the members of the other two extreme categories comprising but a few individuals. The first kind (like human-angels) does not require any direction or control; but it is the second kind (like human-devils) which must be controlled, and prevented from doing evil. Great attention has to be devoted to the third kind (human-men).

225. The members of this third category resemble in certain respects the beasts - they are calm and content with what they possess, so long as they perceive nothing better in the possession of others, or do not suspect some mischief on the part of others. This evil propensity in the face of temptation has been, at all times, the object of intense preoccupation on the part of human society. Thus the father controls his children. The head of the family, of the tribe, of the city-state, or of any other group of men tries to force those who are placed under his authority to be content with what they possess, and not to usurp that which others have obtained in an honest and legitimate way. Perhaps the very aim of human society is none other than controlling temptations and remedying damage which has already been done. All men, even members of the same nation, are not developed alike. A noble spirit is willing to sacrifice and do works of charity. An intelligent spirit sees very far, and consequently any prospect that would compromise attaining some immediate gain, prevents it from doing evil, even if it should not be persuaded to sacrifice on its own initiative. As to the ordinary spirit, not only does it not willingly consent to sacrifice, but it will even permit itself to thrive at the expense of others, unless there be a fear of violent and immediate reaction on the part of its victim, or society, or any other superior power. The obtuse spirit is not even deterred by this fear, and so it persists until the end with its criminal objectives, struggling against all opposition, until society imposes a state where it can no longer exert itself recklessly, such as a punishment by death or imprisonment.

226. All laws, all religions and all philosophies try to persuade the masses, or the intermediary category, [3] to behave in a suitable manner and even to offer voluntary sacrifices in order to help the poor, the destitute and those who have needs and still cannot satisfy them, through no fault of their own.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Characteristic Traits of Islam

227. Islam is an all-embracing mode of life. Not only does it prescribe beliefs but also the rules of social behaviour. Moreover, it occupies itself with the nicer application and functioning of its laws. We know that Islam does not believe in the life of this world as an end in itself, or in a body without a soul. On the contrary, it teaches belief in the Hereafter. Its motto, as enunciated by Qur'an, is "*The best in this world as well as the best in the Hereafter*." It is thus that not only does it praise what is good and condemn evil, but it also provides rewards and sanctions, both spiritual and material. As far as its injunctions and prohibitions are concerned, Islam inculcates within the spirit a fear of God and the last judgement after the Resurrection, and the punishment of Hellfire. Not content with this, it takes all possible precautions in the realm of material sanctions, in order to deter man from permitting himself acts of injustice and violation of the rights of others. It is thus that the believer prays and fasts even when he is not coerced to do so and he even pays a tax when the government ignores fixing the amount or finds itself unable to secure payments by force.

The Basis of Morality

228. It often happens that motives or circumstances can bring about a profound change in the significance of an act which may outwardly seem to resemble one another. For instance, the death occasioned at the hands of a brigand, of a hunter mistaking his victim for game, of a fool, or a minor, in self-defence, by a headsman executing the capital punishment ordered by a tribunal, a soldier defending his country against an aggressive invasion, etc. - in all these cases, the killing is sometimes punished more or less severely, sometimes pardoned, sometimes considered a normal duty which entails neither praise nor condemnation, and sometimes obtains high praise and honour. Almost all human life is composed of acts whose good and evil nature are relative. This is why the Prophet Muhammad has often declared: "**Acts will be (judged) only according to intention.**"

229. Islam is based on the belief that Divine revelation was sent to men through prophets as intermediaries. Its law and morality, like its faith, are therefore based on Divine commandments. It is possible that in the majority of cases, human reason should also arrive at the same conclusion. But essentially it is the Divine aspect which has the decisive significance in Islam and not the reasoning of a philosopher, a jurist or a moralist, the more so because the reasoning of different individuals may differ and lead to completely opposite conclusions. Sometimes the motive of discipline is found underlying an obligation and practice which is apparently superfluous.

230. First of all, one may divide human actions into good and evil (represented by orders and prohibitions). Acts from which one must abstain are also divided into two inclusive categories: (i) Those against which there is temporal sanction or material punishment in addition to condemnation on the day of the Final Judgement, and (ii) those which are condemned by Islam without providing a sanction other than that of the Hereafter.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

231. In a saying attributed to the Prophet (and reported by Qadi 'Iyad, in his *Shifa*, ch. 2) we see the conception of life envisaged by Islam, " 'Ali asked the Prophet one day about the principles governing his general behaviour, and he replied, "**knowledge is my capital, reason is the basis of my religion, love is my foundation, desire is my mount for riding, remembrance of God is my comrade, confidence is my treasure, anxiety is my companion, science is my arm, patience is my mantle, contentment is my booty, modesty is my pride, renunciation of pleasure is my profession, certitude is my food, truth is my intercessor, obedience is my sufficiency, struggle is my habitude and the delight of my heart is in the service of worship**.""

232. On another occasion, the Prophet Muhammad said, "**The sum-total of wisdom is the fear of God.**" Islamic morality begins with the renunciation of all adoration outside God, be it adoration of the self (egoism), or adoration of our own handicrafts (idols, superstitions) etc. and the renunciation of all that degrades humanity (atheism, injustice, etc.).

233. Abolishing the ineluctable inequalities (based on race, colour of skin, language, place of birth) Islam has proclaimed (and realized more than any other system) the superiority of the individual based solely on morality, which is a thing that is accessible and open to everybody - without exception. This is what the Qur'an (49:13) has said: "*O mankind, lo! We have created you of a male and a female, and have made you nations and tribes that ye may know one another; verily the noblest of you in the sight of God is the one who is the most pious; lo! God is Knower, Aware*."

234. In a beautiful passage (17:23-9), the Qur'an gives twelve commandments to the Muslim community, and says:

(i) *Thy Lord hath decreed, that ye worship none save Him.*

(ii) *And that (ye show) kindness to parents. If one of them or both of them were to attain old age with thee, say not 'Fie' unto them nor repulse them, but speak unto them a gracious word. And lower unto them the wing of tenderness through mercy, and say: My Lord! Have mercy on them both, as they did care for me when I was little. Your Lord is best aware of what is in your minds. If ye are righteous, then lo! He is ever Forgiving unto those who turn (unto Him) in repentance.*

(iii) *Give the kinsman his due, and the poor, and the wayfarer, and squander not (thy wealth) in wantonness. Lo! the squanderers are ever brothers of the devils, and the Devil was an ingrate to his Lord. But if thou hast to turn away from them, waiting mercy from thy Lord, for which thou hopest, then speak unto them a gentle word.*

(iv) *And let not thy hand be chained to thy neck nor open it with a complete opening, lest thou sit down rebuked, denuded. Lo! thy Lord enlargeth the provision for whom He will, and straineth (it from whom He will). Lo! He is ever Knower, Seer of His slaves*.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

(v) *Slay not your children, fearing a fall to penury; we shall provide for them and for you. Lo! the slaying of them is a great sin.*

(vi) *And come not near unto fornication. Lo! it is an abomination and an evil way.*

(vii) *And slay not the life which God hath forbidden save with right. Whoso is slain wrongfully, we have given power unto his rightful representative, but let him not commit excess in slaying. Lo! he will be helped.*

(viii) *Come not near the property of the orphan save with that which is better till he come to strength;*

(ix) *And keep the covenant. Lo! of the covenant it will be asked.*

(x) *Fill the measure when ye measure, and weigh with a right balance; this is meet, and best refuge.*

(xi) *Follow not that whereof thou hast no knowledge. Lo! the hearing and the sight and the heart - of each of these it will be asked.*

(xii) *And walk not in the earth exultant. Lo! thou canst not rend the earth, nor canst thou stretch to the height of the hills. The evil of all that is hateful in the sight of thy Lord. This is part of the wisdom wherewith thy Lord hath inspired thee (O Muhammad). And set not up with God any other god, lest thou be cast into hell, reproved, abandoned.*

These commandments, comparable to and more comprehensive than those given to Moses, were revealed to the Prophet during the *Mi 'raj.*

235. It would be too lengthy to cite here all the Quranic exhortations. However, we may quote a passage (4:36-8), in which it speaks of the social behaviour of the average man:

"*And serve God; ascribe nothing as partner unto Him: (show) kindness unto parents, and unto near kindred, and orphans, and the needy, and unto the neighbour who is of kin (unto you) and the neighbour who is not of kin, and the fellow-traveller and the wayfarer, and (the slaves) whom your right hands possess; lo! God loveth not such as are proud and boastful, who hoard their wealth and enjoin avarice on others, and hide that which God hath bestowed upon them of His bounty; for disbelievers. We prepare a shameful doom. And (also) for those who spend their wealth in order to be seen of men, and believe not in God nor the Last Day; whoso taketh Satan for a comrade, a bad comrade hath he.*"

236. In another passage (49:10-12), the Qur'an describes the characteristics of Muslim society: "*The believers are naught else than brethren; therefore make peace between your brethren and observe your duty to God, that haply ye may obtain mercy. O ye who believe! Let not a folk deride a folk who may be better than they are, nor let women (deride) women who may be better than they are; neither defame one another, nor insult one another by nicknames. Bad is*

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Mega Lecture

the name of lewdness after embracing the faith. And whoso turneth not in repentance, such are evil-doers. O ye who believe! Shun much suspicion. For lo! some suspicion is a crime. And spy not, neither backbite one another. Would one of you like to eat the flesh of his dead brother (by backbiting)? Ye abhor that (so abhor the other) and keep your duty to God. Lo! God is Relenting, Merciful."

The Fault and its Expiation

237. Nobody could object to good counsel, offered in the above mentioned verses, but man has his weaknesses. He is composed jointly of the elements of good and evil. By his innate defects, he gets angry; he is subject to temptation, and is driven to do harm to those who are weaker and have no means of defending or avenging themselves. Similarly, his noble sentiments make him repent afterwards; and in proportion to the force of his repentance, he tries more or less to rectify the harm he had done.

238. Islam divides faults into two broad categories . . . those which are committed against the rights of God (unbelief, neglect of worship, etc.), and those against the rights of men. Moreover, God does not pardon the harm done by a man to his fellow-being - it is the victim who alone can pardon. If one does harm to another creature, be it man, animal or any other, one commits in fact a double crime - a crime against one's immediate victim, and also a crime against God - since the criminal conduct in question constitutes a violation of the Divine prescriptions. Thus when there is an injustice or crime against another creature, one has not only to try to repair the damage, by restoring to the victim, of one's violation, the right which had been taken away from him, but he also has to beg pardon from God. In a famous saying of his, the Prophet Muhammad gave a warning, that on Doomsday, a certain person would be thrown in Hell because he had tied up a cat with a rope giving it neither to eat nor to drink, nor letting it go and seek food, thus causing the death of the poor animal in inanition [from lack of nourishment]. In another Hadith, the Prophet spoke of Divine punishment to those men who did not fulfil their duty against even the animals, by not giving them sufficient food, or loading them beyond their strength, etc. The Prophet prohibited even the hewing down of trees without necessity. Men should profit by what God has created, yet in an equitable and reasonable measure, avoid all extravagance and waste.

239. When one causes damage to another and wishes to mend it, there are several ways he could adopt. Sometimes by merely asking pardon everything is set right. At other times it may be necessary to restore the rights which were taken away, or replace them if the original rights could not be restored, and so on.

240. To show clemency to others and pardon them is a noble quality and upon this Islam has often insisted. In eulogizing it, the Qur'an (3:133-4) says: "*And vie one with another for forgiveness from your Lord and for a Paradise as wide as the heavens and the earth, prepared for the pious, who spend (as charity) in ease and in adversity, who control their wrath and are forgiving towards mankind. And God loveth the doers of good."*

Mega Lecture

241. God is incomparably more forgiving and merciful than the most merciful of men. Among the names with which Islam calls God, there is *Rahman* (Most Merciful), *Tauwab* (Most Pardoning) '*Afu* (one who effaces faults), *Ghaffar* (Most Forgiving), etc. Those who commit a sin against God, and then repent find God full of indulgence. Two verses of the Qur'an may show the Islamic notion of the bounty of God:

(a) "*Verily God pardoneth not that partners should be ascribed unto Him, while He pardoneth all else to whom He will*. (4:116)

(b) ". . . *O My slaves who have been prodigal to your own hurt! Despair not of the mercy of God. Verily God forgiveth all sins; verily He is the Forgiving, the Merciful.* (39:53).

243. If one gives up disbelief and turns to God to beg pardon from Him, one can always hope for His clemency. Man is weak, and often breaks his resolutions, but true repentance can always restore the grace of God. There is no formality, no buying of Divine pardon through the mediation of other men, but one must turn directly to God and present to Him one's sincere regrets in a tête-à-tête conversation (*munajat*); for He is the knower of all and nothing can be concealed from Him. **"The Love of God for His creatures is a hundred and more times greater than that of a mother for her child,"** as has once been remarked by the Prophet, for the Prophet Muhammad has said: "**Mercy has been divided by God into one hundred portions, of which He has retained Himself 99 and distributed the one portion among all the beings living on the earth; the mutual mercy found among the creatures comes from the same.**" In a saintly saying (*hadith qudsi*) the Prophet reports God as saying: "**Whoever tries to approach Me by a span, I approach him by a cubit, whoever comes towards Me walking, I run to meet him"**. The Qur'an (11:114) announces no doubt: "*Verily good deeds carry away evil deeds*." Alms and charities are no doubt recommended, yet they do not buy automatically the Divine pardon for a given sin; each has an independent existence, and God's freedom is absolute.

The Injunctions

244. The Qur'an often employs two characteristic terms to designate good and evil. Thus it refers to *ma'ruf* (the good known to everybody and recognized as such), and *munkar* (the evil denounced by everybody and recognized as such). In other words, the Qur'an has confidence in human nature, in the common sense of man, **"There will never be unanimity in favour of evil, even if some people permit it to themselves"** is the purport of a well-known saying of the Prophet. The Qur'an (3:110) calls the faithful "*the best community*" and explains that this is so because they *"enjoin good (**ma'ruf)** and forbid evil (**munkar)** and believe in the One God*." Another passage (103:1-3) is still more emphatic, "*By the Time! Lo! Man is in a state of loss, save those who believe and do good works, and exhort one another to truth (or right) and exhort one another to endurance (or constancy)*."

245. But there are also injunctions against particular evils. As has already been remarked, there are those which accompany a sanction and a public punishment, and those regarding which

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Mega Lecture

there is only a warning of punishment in the Hereafter, and, except in cases of extraordinary gravity, public authorities do not take cognizance of them.

246. In his celebrated speech, on the occasion of the Farewell Pilgrimage, the Prophet declared the ***inviolability of the rights of a man in all the three categories of person, property and honour***. In fact the Muslim penal law takes it into account, declaring that the principal crimes are the following: murder, damage to body, fornication and adultery (which are all crimes against the person), theft and highway robbery (which are crimes against property), and calumny against chastity, and consumption of alcoholic drinks (constituting crimes against honour). All these are punished.

247. As for the damages against a person, the punishment is in principle retaliation - life for life, eye for eye, tooth for tooth. But there is first of all the great principle of motive and intention. Has one caused damage voluntarily or only by accident? Again, there is the choice for the victim (or the heirs of his rights) to agree to a monetary reparation, or even pardon completely. If the judicial proof establishes that the crime was intentional, then the public authorities have no right to pardon, for the matter rests with the sufferer.

248. Entirely different is the case of fornication and adultery. For the consent of the parties does not attenuate its gravity. The Prophet had so greatly succeeded in developing justice and self-criticism among his companions that they preferred the severest public punishment in this world to the one in the Hereafter. So they presented themselves voluntarily before the Prophet, and confessed their sins and submitted themselves cheerfully to the legal sanctions. Outside confession, it is always very difficult to prove illicit sexual relations, if the parties were willing. In order to diminish temptation, Islam has taken other precautions as well: prohibition of promiscuity; of easy and unsupervised meetings between the young of opposite sexes if they are not near relatives; and even the recommendation of the veil to cover the face of a woman if she goes out in the street or meets strangers. Far from attracting the gaze of the amorous strangers by her coquetry, it is the duty of a Muslim woman to reserve her beauty and her attraction only for her husband. The veil has other advantages also for the woman. One knows the great difference between the exterior of those women who work in the fields, for instance, and of those who are not exposed to the sun. One knows also the difference between the outer and inner feathers of a bird. In fact the veil preserves for a longer time the charm and freshness of the skin. One can see that plainly on comparing the skin of the face or hands with that of other parts of the body which are habitually covered. The veil does not at all signify seclusion, but it does diminish the temptation that could attract strangers. It is abusing the credulity of the simpleton to make-believe that covering the face with a veil generates tuberculosis. This disease is as prevalent among people where women-folk never use the veil, not only in Black Africa, but even in the most highly developed societies from Finland to Italy, as the latest research has brought to light In passing, it may be mentioned that there is no legal penalty for the neglect of this Quranic recommendation. (For veil, see also paragraph 392).

249. We are not required to enter into the details of the different aspects of the injunctions against theft and highway robbery, or other crimes against property.

MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

250. It is a characteristic of Islam to have imposed a penalty on the defamation of women in the matter of their chastity. When one thinks of the numerous occasions when one indulges in conjecture against neighbours or other women and the ease with which one gives liberty to one's tongue, in the company of friends, one will admit that this Islamic injunction is well founded in the interests of society. If someone intends to accuse a woman, one should produce judicial proofs; otherwise, conjecture which touches the honour of a woman will be punished with severe sanctions.

251. The prohibition of alcoholic beverages is one of the most well-known traits of Islam. It was by gradual steps that the Qur'an had enforced it: "*They question thee about alcoholic drink and games of chance; say: In both there is great sin and certain profits for men, yet the sin of them is greater than their usefulness*" (2:219). Again (4:43): "*O ye who believe! Draw not near unto service of worship when ye are drunk, till ye know that which ye utter . . .*" And finally (5:93-94): "*O ye who believe! Verily wine and games of chance, and idols, and divining arrows are only infamy of Satan's handiwork; leave it aside, that haply ye may prosper. Satan seeketh only to cast among you enmity and hatred by means of wine and games of chance, and to turn you from remembrance of God and from (His) worship. Will ye then abstain?*" It will not pass unnoticed that in this last verse, the Qur'an includes alcoholic beverages and idolatry in the same category. During his life, the Prophet Muhammad administered forty stripes to those who violated the injunction. The caliph 'Umar doubled the punishment, arguing that drunkenness led to obscene loquacity in which one calumniates [slanders] the chastity of women, for which latter crime the Qur'an (24:4) has imposed the punishment of eighty stripes. Therefore alcoholic beverages should also have the same sanction. How much enormous economic loss would be avoided, and how many homes would recover peace, if drink, so dangerous to health and morality, were given up!

252. Among the acts for which no definite penalty has been prescribed but which are left to the discretion of the judge, we may mention games of chance of all kinds (including lotteries, gambling on race results, etc.). Who does not know the tragedies of casinos? How many homes have not been ruined in the vain hope of easy gain - and therefore illicit gain? Lotteries, on rational scales, gradually upset the equitable distribution of the country's wealth, and prove to be the source of all economic ills. They also affect politics.

253. In his anxiety to cleanse society, and above all public administration, from corruption, the Prophet employed the severest terms of condemnation: "**One who takes as well as one who offers bribe would both go to Hell.**" One day, a tax-collector submitted his accounts to the Prophet, saying: These are the public revenues, and these are gifts which people have offered me. Becoming furious, the Prophet mounted the pulpit of his mosque and spoke: "**Let these tax-collectors remain in the house of their mothers and see if gifts come to them!** " Without the knowledge of her husband, one day the wife of the caliph 'Umar sent through an official envoy, proceeding to Byzantium, a present to the wife of the emperor who in her turn, sent a precious necklace. When the caliph learnt of this, he confiscated the necklace in favour of the Public Treasury, and paid his wife the value of her original present to the empress as has been recorded by Tabari.

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

254. In order to ameliorate public morality, the Prophet said one day: "**Don't insult time; it is God that you insult, because the succession of nights and days comes from Him.**" This is an admonition that deserves to be considered by our contemporaries even today. After all what avails our malediction of the weather so many times every day, if not to prove our own stupidity?

255. Islam does not exact the impossible; it seeks only to bring a constant betterment of human morals into all walks of life by means available to individuals and collectivities. And the responsibility will always remain personal. So the Qur'an (2:286) says: " . . . **for each soul, it is only that which it hath earned, and against it only that which it hath deserved . .** ." A noble spirit does not permit itself evil on the pretext that others also indulge in the same. Instead of imitating the vices of others, one should rather set others an example of good and of integrity of character.

256. Some remarks may be made on social conduct in general. Regarding the rights of good neighbourliness, the Prophet Muhammad declared: "**Gabriel has so often and so greatly insisted upon the rights of neighbours, that I feared that he was going to accord them the right to heritage even as to the near relatives of a deceased.**" It is related that there lived a Jew in the neighbourhood of the Prophet in Madinah, and the Prophet himself set an example to show how a Muslim should treat his non-Muslim neighbours. Among other daily acts of courtesy, the Prophet used to go to the house of this Jew if he fell ill, in order to inquire about his health, and to be otherwise of help to him. As regards daily relations with others, the Prophet declared: "**None of you is a believer if he does not like for his brother exactly that which he likes for his own self.**" Or again: "**The best of men is he who does good to others.**" The Qur'an (59:9) has spoken of a concrete case, that of the first Muslims of Madinah, who had extended their hospitality to the Meccan refugees, and it cites them as an example of practical Islam: ". . . *they prefer (the Refugees) above themselves though poverty be their (own.) lot* . . ."

257. To conclude; "*O ye who believe! Be ye staunch in justice, witnesses for God, even though it be against yourselves or (your) parents or (your) kindred, whether (the case be) of a rich man or a poor man . . .*" (Qur'an 4:135).

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Chapter No: 08

The Political System of Islam

Since the Islamic conception of life is a co-ordination between the body and the soul, it was natural that a very close relationship should have been established between religion and politics, between the mosque and the citadel. In its social conception, Islam is "communal." It prefers a social life, demands worship in collectivity and congregation, in which every one turns towards the same centre (the*Ka'bah*), fasting together at the same time in all parts of world, and visiting the House of God (the *Ka'bah*) as one of the principal duties of all Muslims, men and women. It lays emphasis on strictly personal responsibility, and does not forget the development of the individual, and yet it organizes all individuals in a single whole, the world Muslim community. The same law regulates the affairs of all - whatever the class or country. And as we shall see, the same chief, Caliph, receives the allegiance of all the faithful of the world.

Nationality

259. One finds in human society, by and by, two contradictory tendencies: centripetal and centrifugal. On the one hand, separate individuals group themselves in wedlock, families, tribes, city-states, states and empires - sometimes willingly and at other time under compulsion. On the other hand, descending from the same couple and ancestors, groups detach themselves from bigger units in order to lead separate and independent lives, away from their relatives. Sometime this separation is occasioned amicably for the purpose of finding the means of livelihood elsewhere and lightening the charge on a locality too restricted to furnish food for all. At other times, it is dictated by passions, quarrels and other motivations.

260. In spite of the almost unanimous concept that all human races have the same common origin, two factors have powerfully contributed to accentuate the diversity: death and distance. Man is instinctively attached to close relatives and ancestors, yet the cementing factor disappears with the death of the common parent. And the notion of relationship among the surviving members, whose number multiplies every day, bears an importance and an influence which gradually become less and less effective. With regards to distance, not only does it make us forget the ties of relationship, but also, as history has shown, creates insurmountable obstacles. One ceases to speak the same language, uphold the same interests or defend the same values.

261. At the dawn of Islam, in the 7th century of the Christian era, differences and prejudices arising from race, language, place of birth among other things, had become the rule rather than the exception. They developed deep-rooted notions, which grew to be almost natural instincts. It was so everywhere in the world, in Arabia, in Europe, in Africa, in Asia, in America and elsewhere. Islam came to class these notions among the evil traits of humanity, and tried to bring about a cure.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

262. The unifying ties of family, clan, and even tribe proved too weak to serve the needs of defence and security in a world where egoism and cupidity had rendered inevitable wars of everybody against everybody else. But groups bigger than tribes were created sometimes by the use of force by warriors and emperors. However, failing to create an identity of interests among the totality of the subjects, these artificial unions were constantly menaced by disintegration.

263. Without entering into the history of the several thousand years of the development of this aspect of human society, it would suffice to consider the idea of nationality prevalent in our own time in order to illustrate the point. If nationality is based on the identity of language, race, or place of birth, it goes without saying that it will make the problem of aliens or strangers exist perpetually, and such a nationality will be too narrow, ever to be able to embrace the inhabitants of the entire world. And if the aliens are not assimilated, there will always be the risk of conflicts and wars. In fact, the tie of nationality is not a very sure bond at all. For two brothers may be enemies, and two strangers, having a common ideology, may be friends.

264. The Qur'an (30:22, 49:13) has rejected all superiority on account of language, colour of skin or other ineluctable incidences of nature, and recognizes the only superiority of individuals as that based on piety. A common ideology is the basis of "nationality" among the Muslims, and Islam is this ideology. We shall not speak of religions which do not admit conversion. Among the religions of universal applications, Islam distinguishes itself by the feature that it does not exact the renunciation of the world, but insists on the body and soul growing and operating simultaneously. The past has shown that Muslims have assimilated this supra-racial and supra-regional ideal of brotherhood; and this sentiment is a living force among them to this day.

265. Naturalization is a feature now admitted among all "nations" but to be naturalized in a new language, in a new colour of skin, and in a new land is not as easy as to adhere to a new ideology. For others nationality is essentially an ineluctable accident of nature. In Islam it is a thing which depends solely upon the will and choice of the individual.

Means of Universalization

266. Apart from the means already mentioned, namely the same law for all, the same direction to turn to in the service of prayer, the same place for meeting in the universal pilgrimage, etc., the institution of the universal caliphate plays a particular role.

267. Muhammad of holy memory had proclaimed himself to be a messenger of God, sent towards the totality of human beings (cf. Qur'an 34:28) and also to be the last of such messengers (cf. Qur'an 33:40), and therefore for all time, till the end of the world. His teaching abolished the inequalities of races and classes. Moreover, the Prophet himself exercised all powers, spiritual as well a temporal and others, in the community which he had organized into a state and endowed with all its organisms. Thus cumulation of powers was passed in heritage, after his death, to his successors in the state, with this difference that these successors were not prophets, and so did not receive the Divine revelations. The Prophet Muhammad had

Mega Lecture

always insisted on the necessity of community life, and he went so far as to declare that **"Whoever died without knowing his imam (caliph) dies in paganism."** He had also insisted on unity and solidarity inside the Muslim community, saying that "Whoever separates himself from it goes to Hell." (reported by Muslim, Tirmidhi, etc.)

268. Even in the time of the Prophet, there were individuals and even groups of Muslims, who lived voluntarily or under constraint, outside the frontiers of the Islamic State, for example in Abyssinia, and in Mecca (before its conquest by the Prophet). Some of the non-Muslim regions did not know religious tolerance, and persecuted the Muslims (as in the city-state of Mecca and the Byzantine empire). Others, like in Christian Abyssinia, practised a liberal policy in matters of conscience.

269. As we have just seen, the caliph inherited from the Prophet the exercise of the double power, spiritual-temporal, and he presided over the celebration of the service of worship in the mosque, and he was the head of the State in temporal affairs.

270. To recognize the Prophet, one used to take the oath of allegiance, (*bai'ah*, or contract of obedience). One did the same for the caliphs at the mement of their election. The basis of the statal organization is a contract concluded between the ruler and the ruled. In practice only persons who are the most representative of the population take this oath of allegiance. This nomination, under a contract of course, implies the possibility of the annulment of the contract and the deposition of the ruler by the same representative personalities.

271. It was by virtue of being the messenger of God, that the Prophet Muhammad commanded his community; and the law which he promulgated and left to posterity was equally of Divine inspiration. For his successors, the sovereignty of God continued to exist as a reality, in the sphere of their competence; therein they were the successors of the Prophet of God. But for them there was no possibility of receiving Divine revelations. Thus their power in the matter of legislation was restricted (i.e., they could not abrogate the laws established by the Prophet in the name of God, they could however interpret these laws, and legislate in cases where the law of the time of the Prophet was silent). In other words, the caliph could not be a despot, at least in matters of legislation; he is a constitutional head, and as much subject to the laws of the country as any ordinary inhabitant of the State. The tradition created by the Prophet himself is responsible for the fact that the head of the Muslim State should not be above the law. History shows that the caliphs could always be cited, even by humblest of the subjects, also by non-Muslims, to appear before the courts of the country, from the time of Abu-Bakr (the first caliph) to our day.

272. The theory and practice of the caliphate have however not always been identical in Muslim society. A rapid sketch of this history would be useful for understanding the actual position.

The Caliphate

Mega Lecture

273. The Qur'an speaks of kings, both good and bad, and never refers to other forms of government, such as a republic. The fact that there have been differences of opinion, at the death of the Prophet, shows that he had not left positive and precise instructions regarding his succession. Certain groups wanted that the statal power should rest, as an heirloom, in his family - and since he had left no male issue, his uncle 'Abbas, or his cousin 'Ali were the next of kin to succeed him. Others wanted an *ad hoc* individual election. And inside this group, there were differences as to the candidate to be chosen. An overwhelming majority rallied in favour of an election. The form of government thus established was intermediary between hereditary monarchy and a republic - the caliph was elected for life. If the fact of election makes it resemble a republic, the duration of the power was like that of a monarchy. From the very beginning, there have been dissidents to the elected caliphs; later there have been even rival claimants and these caused bloodshed in the community from time to time.

Later, power was held by some dynasty. Thus came the Umaiyads, who in their turn were replaced by the 'Abbasids; these latter did not succeed in obtaining the homage of the far-off province of Spain, where independent dynasties of Muslim rulers exercised sovereign powers, without, however, daring to assume the title of "caliph."

It required two more centuries before the Muslim world knew the multiplicity of caliphs, at Baghdad, Cordova, and Cairo (Fatimids). The Turks, when converted to Islam, brought a new element. First they furnished soldiers and then commanders who became the real governing power in the State. Side by side with the caliphs, there appeared a "commander of the commanders," and later a "sultan," and the State authority became divided and administration went into the hands of the Sultan who governed in the name of the caliph. This excited greed and aroused jealousies. Several provinces became independent, producing "dynasties" of governors, who in their turn were replaced by other adventurers. And the caliph had no choice but to ratify the *fait accompli* whenever it arose.

The Fatimid caliphate of Cairo disappeared first; and this kingdom was acquired by a dynasty of Turkish-Kurdish governors, who recognized the caliphate of Baghdad. When this latter was devastated by the pagan Tartars, the seat of the caliphate was moved to Cairo. Later the Ottoman Turks conquered Egypt, and abolished the neo-'Abbasid dynasty of caliphs there. After some time, the Spanish caliphate surrendered the country to Christian conquerors, and reconstituted a caliphate in Morocco. The Turkish Istanbul, and the Mughal Delhi also pretended to the caliphate: but however big their empires might have been, their claims were recognized only inside their respective jurisdictions.

Prior to these two, there had at least been the obligatory qualification of a caliph being a Quraishite, i.e., a descendant of the Meccan Arabs of the time of the Prophet. The Turks and the Mughals did not fulfil this condition, but we shall revert to the point later. The Mughals were removed from their Indian power by the British; the Turkish caliph of Istanbul was later deposed by his own subjects, who not only chose a republican form of government, but would not even preserve the dignity of caliphate for the head of the state. The powers and privileges of the caliph were nominally conferred on the Grand National Assembly, which however neither

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

claimed them nor exercised them. The last Turkish caliph 'Abdul-Majid II, the 100th after the Prophet, died in exile as a refugee in Paris. In the meantime the caliphate of Morocco became a protectorate of France.

274. Some observations suggest themselves in this connection. The Prophet had predicted that after him, the caliphate would continue only for thirty years and that afterwards a "**biting kingship**" would follow (cf. Ibn Athir's Nihayah, Tirmidhi, Abu Dawud). Another saying is attributed to the Prophet to the effect that the caliphate belongs to the tribe of Quraish. The context of this last direction is not known; but the practice of the Prophet himself does not seem to confirm the obligatory character of this qualification. For history shows that since his arrival in Madinah and the founding of a City State there, the Prophet left his metropolis at least 25 times, in order to go on military expeditions to defend the state territory as well as for pacific avocations (such as contracting alliances, making a pilgrimage). On all such occasions, he nominated a viceregent in Madinah, yet it was not the same person that he chose always for carrying on the interim government. We find among these viceregents, called Khalifa or caliph, Madinans, Kinanites and others; there was even a blind person. At the time of his last journey when he went on pilgrimage, just three months before his death, it was a blind person who was the "caliph" in the metropolis. Another point to be noted is that, at the election of Abu Bakr as caliph, there was a proposal for a sort of joint rule, with two caliphs operating simultaneously.[(1)] For practical reasons, the proposal was rejected. It is nevertheless one of the possible forms of Muslim government, as it is recognized by the Qur'an (20:32), which speaks of Aaron as the associate of Moses in the statal power, and because this form was preserved by the Prophet himself in 'Uman where Jaifar and 'Abd, who ruled conjointly, had embraced Islam.[(2)]

275. The universal caliph does not exist nowadays among the Muslims, nevertheless the masses continue to aspire for it. The very independent existence of Muslims is also subject to fragmentary re-conquest. Before restoring the institution of a universal caliphate, it may be that they could have recourse to the precedents of the time of the Prophet, in order to avoid regional rivalries and susceptibilities. One may have, for instance, a 'Council of Caliphate' composed of the heads of all the Muslim States, Sunnites as well as Shi'ites, Quraishites as well as non-Quraishites. By rotation every member could preside over the Council, say for a year.

Duties of the State

276. The duties and functions of a Muslim state seem to be four: (i) Executive (for the civil and military administration), (ii) Legislative, (iii) Judicial, and (iv) Cultural.

277. The Executive does not require elaborate examination. It is self-evident, and obtains everywhere in the world. The sovereignty belongs to God and it is a trust which is administered by man, for the well-being of all without exception.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

278. We have already mentioned the restrictions of legislative competence in the Islamic society, in the light of the fact that there is the Quran, the Word of God, which is the source of law in all walks of life, spiritual as well as temporal, (cf. also below 318/v.)

279. In the domain of judiciary, we have already pointed out the equality of all men before law, in which the head of the state is not exempt even *vis-a-vis* his subjects. The Qur'an (5:42-50, 5:66) has ordained another important disposition: The non-Muslim inhabitants of the Islamic State enjoy a judicial autonomy, each community having its own tribunals, its own judges, administering its own laws in all walks of life, civil as well as penal. The Qur'an says that the Jews should apply the Biblical laws, and the Christians those of the Gospel. It goes without saying that in the case of conflict between laws, where parties to a litigation belong to different communities, special dispositions would solve the difficulties for the law as well as of the judge; and it is a kind of private international law which regulates such cases.

280. By cultural duty, we mean the very *raison-d'etre* of Islam, which seeks that the Word of God alone should prevail in this world. It is the duty of each and every individual Muslim, and *a fortiori* that of the Muslim government, not only to abide by the Divine law in daily behaviour, but also to organize foreign missions in order to inform others what Islam stands for. The basic principle, as the Qur'an (2:256) says, is that "There is no compulsion in religion." Far from implying a lethargy and indifference, a perpetual and disinterested struggle is thereby imposed to persuade others for the well-foundedness of Islam.

Form of Government

281. Islam attaches no importance to the external form of government. It is satisfied if the well-being of man in both the worlds is aimed for, and the Divine law applied. Thus the constitutional questions take a secondary place. Thus as we have already mentioned, a republic, a monarchy, a joint-rule, among other forms, are all valid in the Islamic community.

282. If this aim is realized by a single chief, one accepts it. If at a given time, in a given surrounding, all the requisite qualities of a "commander of the Faithful" or caliph are not found united in the same person, one admits voluntarily the division of power also for the purpose of the better functioning of the government. We may refer to the famous case cited by the Qur'an (2:246-47) - a former prophet was solicited by his people to select for them a king beside his own prophetic self, so that they might wage war under his leadership, against the enemy which had expelled them from their homes and familes. The designation of a king in the presence of and in addition to a prophet, and even by the intermediary of the latter, shows the lengths to which one can go in this direction. A division is thus made between the spiritual and temporal functions, yet no arbitrary power is tolerated for either of them. The politics and the king remain as much subject to the Divine law as the cult and the prophet. The source of authority and codes of law remain the same, only the application of law and the execution of necessary dispositions relate to different persons. It is more a question of specialization than a divorce between the two aspects of life.

Mega Lecture

Consultative Deliberations

283. The importance and utility of consultation cannot be too greatly emphasized. Again and again the Qur'an (3:159,27:32,42:38,47:21) commands Muslims to make their decisions after consultation, whether in a public matter or a private one. The practice of the Prophet has reinforced this disposition. For, in spite of the exceptional quality of his being guided by the Divine revelations, the Prophet Muhammad always consulted his companions and the representatives of the tribes of his adherents, before making decisions. The first caliphs were no less ardent in their defence of consultative institutions.

284. In this respect also, the Qur'an does not prescribe hard and fast rules. The number, form of election, duration of representation, etc., are left to the discretion of the leaders of every age and every country. What is important is that one should be surrounded by representative personalities, enjoying the confidence of those whom they represent and who possess integrity of character.

284. The Qur'an has also spoken of a kind of proportionate representation, while describing the selection of 70 representatives from among his people by Moses, to be received in the presence of God (cf. Qur'an 7:155). Further (in 7:160) one may also discern a sort of proportionate representation, since twelve springs of water were alloted to as many tribes accompanying Moses in the desert. Anyhow, we know that the aim of all representation - selected or elected - is that the government should always remain in touch with public opinion. This aim is realized in Islam in a perfect manner through the institution of the congregational service of worship. So five times every day - and even on Friday which is the weekly holiday - every Muslim has to gather in the mosque of the street or locality where he resides (or is otherwise present), and it is the highest government official of the locality who leads the service of worship. This provides the possibility of meeting the highest responsible authority and complaining to him of any injustice or hardship befalling any individual. If that proves to be of no avail, the individual goes to a higher official, even to the head of the State who also leads the service of worship in the public mosque of the capital, locality or street and is accessible to every commoner.

MegaLecture

Foreign Policy

286. The relations with foreign countries are based on what is called 'international law.' The rules of conduct in this domain have had an evolution very much slower than those of the mutual behaviour inside a social group. In pre-Islamic antiquity, international law had no independent existence as it formed part of politics and was dependent on the will and pleasure of the head of the State. Few were the rights recognized for foreign friends, still less for enemies.

287. We may bring into relief the historic fact, that it was the Muslims who had not only developed international law as a distinct discipline - the first in the world - but also made it form a part of law (instead of politics). They composed special monographs on the subject, under the name of *siyar* (conduct, i.e., of the ruler), and they also spoke of it in the general treatises of

law. To the very first originators of these studies (of the early second century of the *Hijrah*/8th century of the Christian era), the question of war formed part of penal law. So after discussing brigandage and highway robbery of local people, the jurists logically spoke of similar activities by foreigners, demanding a greater mobilization of the forces of order. But the very inclusion of war under the heading of 'penal law' means unequivocally that it had to do with legal matters, in which the accused had the right of defending himself before a judicial tribunal.

288. The basic principle of the system of international relations in Islam, in the words of jurists, is that "**the Muslims and non-Muslims are equal (*sawa* ') in respect of the sufferings of this world.**" In ancient times, the Greeks, for instance, had the conception that there was an international law which regulated the relations amongst only the Greek city-states. As for the Barbarians, (i.e., non-Greeks) nature had intended them, as was said by Aristotle, to be the slaves of the Greeks. Therefore it was an arbitrary conduct, and no law, which was the rule with regard to relations with them. The ancient Hindus had a similar notion, and the dogma of the division of humanity into castes together with the notion of un-touchability rendered the fate of the defeated even more precarious. The Romans recognized a few rights in respect of foreign friends; yet for the rest of the world there was nothing but discretion and arbitrary rule, changing with the whims and fancies of individual commanders and ages. The Jewish law asserted (cf. Numbers, 31/8-9,17-18); Deuteronomy 20/16,1 Samuel 15/3) that God had ordained the extermination of the Amalecites ('Amaliqah, Arab inhabitants of Palestine); and that the rest of the world might be allowed to live on payment of tribute to and as servants of the Jews. Until 1856, the Westerners reserve the application of international law to Christian peoples. Since then they have made a distinction between the civilized and non-civilized peoples, with the latter still having no rights. In the history of International law, Muslims have been the first - and so far also the only - to admit the right of foreigners without any discrimination or reserve both during war and peace.

289. The first Muslim State was founded and governed by the Prophet. It was the city-state of Madinah, a confederacy of autonomous villages, inhabited by Muslims, Jews, pagan Arabs, and possibly a handful of Christians. The very nature of this State demanded a religious tolerance, which was formally recognized in the constitution of this State, which document has come down to us. The first treaties of defensive alliance were concluded with non-Muslims, and were always scrupulously observed. The Qur'an insists in the strongest of terms on the obligation of fulfilling promises and on being just in this respect (otherwise imposing punishment in the Hereafter).

290. The different sources of the rules of international conduct comprise not only internal legislation, but also treaties with foreigners, etc.

291. The jurists have so greatly insisted on the importance of the given work, that they say that if a foreigner obtains permission and comes to the Islamic territory for a fixed period, and if in the meantime a war breaks out between the Muslim government and that of the said foreigner, the security of the latter would not be affected. He may stay in tranquility until the expiration of his visa of sojourn. Not only may he return home in all safety and security, but he may also take

MegaLecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

with him all his goods and gains. Moreover during the sojourn, he would enjoy the protection of the courts even as before the outbreak of the war.

292. The person of the ambassador is considered immune from all violation, even if he brings a most unpleasant message. He enjoys his liberty of creed, and security of sojourn and return.

293. The question of jurisdiction has also certain peculiarities. Foreigners residing in the Islamic territory are subjected to Muslim jurisdiction, but not to Muslim law, because Islam tolerates on its territory a multiplicity of laws, with autonomous judiciary for each community. A stranger would belong therefore to the jurisdiction of his own confessional tribunal. If he is a Christian, Jew, or anything else, and if the other party to the litigation is also of the same confession - no matter whether this other party is a subject of the Muslim State or a stranger - the case is decided by the confessional court according to its own laws. Generally no distinction is made between civil and criminal cases with respect to this jurisdiction. As for cases where the litigants belong to different communities, the question has already been discussed above. However, it is always permissible under Muslim law (cf. Qur'an 5:42-50) for a non-Muslim to renounce this privilege and go before the Islamic tribunal, provided both parties to the suit agree. In such an eventuality, the Islamic law is applied. It is permissible for the Muslim judge to apply even foreign law, personal law of the parties to the case, as is evident from the practice of the Prophet: Two Jews, guilty of adultery, were brought by their coreligionists, and the Prophet caused to bring the Bible (Book of Levites) and administered Jewish law to them, as is reported by Bukhari. It may be mentioned, by the way, that the concern for legality has forced the Muslim jurists to admit that if a crime is committed even against a Muslim, who is the subject of the Muslim State, by a foreigner in a foreign country, and this foreigner later comes peacefully to the Muslim territory, he will not be tried by the Islamic tribunals, which are not competent to hear a case that had taken place outside the territory of their jurisdiction. Muslim jurists are unanimous on the point. Muhammad ash-Shaibani, pupil of Abu Hanifah, has recorded even a saying of the Prophet in support of this law: " 'Atiyah Ibn Qais al-Kilabi relates that the Prophet has said: If a man takes refuge in enemy country after having committed murder, sexual immorality or theft, and later returns after obtaining safe-conduct, he would still be judged for what he had fled from. But if he has committed murder, illicit sexual intercourse or theft in the enemy territory and later came on safe-conduct, no punishment would be inflicted on him for what he had committed in the enemy territory." (Sarakhsi, Sharh as-Siyar al-Kabir, IV. 108.)

Mega Lecture

294. Islamic law does not admit exemptions in favour of the head of the State, who is as much subject to the jurisdiction of the courts as any other inhabitant of the country. If the head of the Muslim State does not enjoy such privileges (of injustice, excesses of class discrimination) in his own country, one should not expect them in favour of foreign sovereigns and ambassadors. All regard, appropriate to their quality as guest and their dignity, is paid to them, yet they are not held to be above law and justice.

295. Several cases of classical times bring to relief another peculiar feature of Islamic justice. Hostages were exchanged to guarantee the faithful execution of treaties, stipulating expressly that if one of the contracting parties should murder the hostages furnished by the other party,

this latter would have the right to be avenged on the hostages in its hands. Cases of this kind happened in the time of caliph Mu'awiyah and al-Masur, and the Muslim jurists unanimously observed that the enemy hostages could not be put to death, because the perfidy and treachery was employed by their ruler and not by these hostages. The Qur'an (S:l64, 53:38, etc.) forbids formally vicarious punishment and inflicting reprisals on one for the crime of another.

296. The Muslim law of war is humane. It makes a distinction between belligerents and combatants. It does not permit the killing of minors, women, the very old, sick, and monks Debts in favour of the citizens of the enemy country are not touched by the declaration of war. All killing or devastation beyond the strict indispensable minimum is forbidden. Prisoners are well treated, and their acts of belligerency are not considered crimes. In order to diminish the temptation of the conquering soldiers, booty does not go to the one who seizes it, but to the government, which centralizes all spoils and redistributes them, four-fifths going to the participants of the expedition, one-fifth to the government coffers; the share of a soldier and of the commander-in-chief are alike and equal.

297. In an interesting passage (47:35), the Qur'an enjoins peace and says: "*Do not falter, and cry for peace when ye are the uppermost: God is with you and He will not forget your (praiseworthy) actions*." It reverts to it again (8:61) and says: "*If they incline to peace, then incline to that and have confidence in God." So did the Prophet on the conquest of Mecca, and told its inhabitants: "Go, you are freed."*

298. The Qur'an attaches such great importance to the given word, that it does not hesitate (8:72) to give it preference over the material interest of the Muslim community. It teaches us the Islamic law of neutrality even in the case of religious persecution, in the following terms: ". .. *with regard to those who believe (in Islam) but do not immigrate (into Islamic territory), ye have no duty to protect them till they immigrate; but if they seek help from you in the name of religion then it* is your *duty to help (them) except against a folk between whom and you there is a treaty of peace (mithaq): and God is Seer of what ye do."*

Conclusion

299. To sum up, Islam seeks to establish a world community, with complete equality among people and without distinction of race class, or country. It seeks to convert by persuasion, allowing no compulsion in religious beliefs, every individual being personally responsible to God. To Islam, government signifies a trust, a service, in which the functionaries are the servants of the people. According to Islam, it is the duty of every individual to make a constant effort to spread good and prevent evil - and God judges us according to our acts and intentions.

MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Chapter No: 09

The Judicial System of Islam

LAW has existed in human society from time immemorial. Every race, every region, and every group of men has made some contribution in this sphere. The contribution made by Muslims is as rich as it is worthy and valuable.

Science of Law

301. The ancients have all had their particular laws, yet a science of law, abstract in existence and distinct from laws and codes, does not seem to have ever been thought of before Shafi'i [(1)] (150-204 A.H./767-820 C.E.). The work of this jurist (*Risalah*) designates this science under the expressive name of *usal al-fiqh* (Roots of Law) from which shoot the branches of the rules of human conduct. Since then, this science which was called *Usul al-Fiqh* among the Muslims, treats together with the philosophy of law, sources of rules, and principles of legislation, interpretation and application of legal texts. These latter, i.e., laws and rules are called *furu*' (branches) of this tree. Apparently these authors were inspired in the choice of the terms by the Quranic verse (14:24-25): "the example of a goodly word is like a goodly tree: its roots set firm, its branches reaching into heaven, giving its fruit at every season by permission of its Lord."

Intention in Act

302. Among the novelties in the domain of fundamental notions of law, it may be pointed out that the importance given to the conception of motive and intention (*niyah*) in acts. This notion is based on the celebrated saying of the Prophet of Islam (d. 632 of Christian era): "**The acts are not** (to be judged) **except by motives**." Ever since, an intentional tort or crime, and one caused involuntarily, have not been treated alike by Muslim tribunals.

Written Constitution of State

303. It is interesting as well as inspiring to note that the very first revelation (Qur'an 96:1-5) received by the Prophet of Islam, who was an unlettered person himself, was the praise of the pen as a means of learning unknown things, and as a grace of God. It is not surprising that, when the Prophet Muhammad endowed his people with a unique form of state, created out of nothing, he promulgated a written constitution for this State, which was a city-state at first, but only ten years later, at the moment of the demise of its founder, extended over the whole of the big Arabian Peninsula, and the southern portions of Iraq and Palestine.[(2)] After another fifteen years, during the caliphate of 'Uthman, there was an astonishing penetration of Muslim armies to Andalusia (Spain) on the one hand, and the Chinese Turkestan[(3)] on the other, they having already occupied the countries that lay in between. This written constitution, prepared by Prophet Muhammad, which consists of 52 clauses, has come down to us *in toto* (cf. Ibn Hisham,

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

for instance). It addresses a variety of questions, such as the respective rights and duties of the ruler and the ruled, legislation, administration of justice, organization of defence, treatment of non-Muslim subjects, social insurance on the basis of mutualism and other requirements of that age. The Act dates from 622 of the Christian era [C.E.] (the first year of the *Hijrah*).

Universal International Law

304. War, which unfortunately has always been very frequent among the members of the human family, is a time when one is least disposed to behave reasonably and do justice against one's own self, and in favour of one's adversary. As it is really a question of life and death, and a struggle for very existence, in which the least mistake or error would lead to dangerous consequences, the sovereigns and heads of States have always claimed the privilege to decide, at their discretion, the measures they take in regard to the enemy. The science relating to such behaviour of independent sovereigns has existed from very old times, but it nevertheless formed a part of politics and mere discretion and was, at the most, guided by experience. The Muslims seem to have been the first to separate this science of public international law from the changing whims and fancies of the rulers of the State, and to place it on a purely legal basis. Moreover, it is they who have left to posterity the oldest extant works on international law, developed as an independent science. Among authors of such treatises, we find names of such eminent personalities as Abu Hanifah, Malik, al-Auza'i, Abu Yousuf, Muhammad ash-Shaibani, Zufar, al-Waqidi, etc. They all called the subject *siyar* (conduct, i.e., of the sovereign). Further, in the ordinary codes of law (the oldest extant work hails from Zaid ibn 'Ali who died in 120 or 122 A.H., and also by every subsequent author) one speaks of this subject as forming part of the law of the land. In fact one speaks of it immediately after the question of highway robbery, as if war could be justified for the same reason as police action against highwaymen. The result is that belligerents have both rights and obligations, cognizable by Muslim courts.

General Characteristics of the Muslim Law Code

305. The first thing which strikes the imagination of the reader of a manual on Islamic law is that this law seeks to regulate the entire field of human life, in its material aspect as well as the spiritual one. Such manuals begin usually with the rites and practices of cult, and discuss under this rubric also the constitutional question of sovereignty, since the *imam,* i.e., the head of the State is *ex officio* leader of the service of worship in the mosque (cf. Kitab al-Umm of Shafi'i, ch. salat). One should not therefore be astonished that this part of law books deal also with the subject of the payment of taxes. Since the Qur'an has often spoken of worship and the *zakat*-tax in the same breath, worship being bodily service and the tax the service of God by means of money. Thereafter the law manual discusses contractual relations of all sorts; then the crimes and penalties, which include laws of war and peace with foreign countries, i.e., international law and diplomacy also; and finally the rules governing heritage and wills. Man is composed of both body and soul, and if the government, with its enormous resources at its disposal, attends exclusively to material affairs, the soul would be famished, being left to its own private resources (very meagre in comparison with those available in temporal affairs.) The unequal developments of body and soul will lead to a lack of equilibrium in man, the consequences of

Mega Lecture

which will in the long run be disastrous to civilization. This treatment of the whole, of both body and soul, does not imply that the uninitiated should venture in the domain of religion, just like a poet should not be allowed to perform surgical operations for instance. Every branch of human activity must have its own specialists and experts.

306. Another feature of the Islamic law seems to be the emphasis laid on the correlativity of right and obligation. Not only the mutual relations of men among themselves, but even those of men with their Creator are based on the same principle; and cult is nothing but the performance of the duty of man corresponding to the rights to the usufruct of worldly things that Providence has accorded him. To speak only of the "rights of man," without simultaneously bringing into relief his duties would be transforming him into a rapacious beast, a wolf or a devil.

Philosophy of Law

307. The classical jurists, among Muslims, place laws on the duality of good and evil. One should do what is good and abstain from what is evil. Good and evil are sometimes absolute and self-evident, yet at other times merely relative and partial. This leads us to the five-fold division of all judicial rules, both orders and injunctions. Thus, all that is absolutely good would be an absolute duty, and one must do that. Everything which has a preponderant good would be recommended and considered meritorious. Things where both these aspects, of good and evil, are equal, or which have neither of them, would be left to the discretion of the individual to do or abstain from, at will, and even to change the practice from time to time. This category would be a matter of indifference to law. Things absolutely evil would be objects of complete prohibition, and, finally, things which have a preponderance of evil would be reprehensible and discouraged. This basic division of acts or rules into five categories may have other subdivisions with minute nuances like the directions on a compass in addition to the four cardinal points of north, south, east and west.

308. It remains to define and distinguish between things good and the evil. The Qur'an, which is the Word of God and a revered Book by Muslims, speaks of these on many occasions, and says that one must do the *ma'ruf* and abstain from the *munkar*. Now, *ma'ruf* means a good which is recognized as such by everybody and which is considered by reason to be good, and therefore is commanded. Munkr means a thing which is denounced by everyone as having no good whatsoever and is an evil which is recognized as such by everybody, and that which is considered by reason to be evil would be forbidden. A very great part of Islamic morality belongs to this domain, and the cases are very rare where the Qur'an forbids a thing in which there is a divergence of human opinion, such as the prohibition of alcoholic drinks, or games of chance. But to tell the truth, the *raison-d'etre* of law even in such cases is not concealed from thoughtful, mature minds. In practice, this is a question of confidence in the wisdom and intelligence of the Legislator, whose directions in all the other cases have occasioned nothing but universal approbation.

The Sanctions

MegaLecture

309. One meets among the members of the human race a most varied temperament, and these could be divided into three big categories: (1) those who are good and resist all temptations of evil, with- out in the least being compelled by anybody thereto, (2) those who are bad, and seek, in every way to escape even from the most strict supervision, and finally (3) those who behave in a suitable manner as long as they fear reprisal, but who would also permit themselves injustice when there are temptations with a chance of escaping detection. Unfortunately the number of individuals of the first category is very restricted; they need neither guides, nor sanctions in the interest of society. The disposition of the spirit to do harm to others may be a sickness, a remnant of the criminal animality, a result of bad education, or due to other causes. An attempt will be made to control and counteract the possible harm done by men of the second category, whose number, fortunately, is also not very great. There remains the third or the intermediate category which is the very vast majority of men. They require sanctions, but of what kind?

310. It goes without saying that if a chieftain himself has a bad conscience, having committed a prohibited thing, he would have little courage to reproach others about that thing. Therefore Islam has struck at the root and the source of this kind of evil, and declared that nobody is exempt from obligations, not even the sovereign, and not even the Prophet. The teaching as well as the practice of the Prophet Muhammad, followed by his successors, requires that the head of the State should be capable of being cited before the tribunals of the country, without the least restriction. The Islamic tradition has been that judges never hesitated in practice to decide even against their sovereigns in cases of default.

311. It is needless to mention in detail the material sanctions which exist in Islam just like in all other civilizations. Thus there are services which are charged with the maintenance of law and order, watch and ward, peace and tranquillity in the mutual relations of the inhabitants of the country. And if anybody is victim of violence he can complain before the tribunals, and the police would drag the accused to appear before the judges, whose decision is finally executed.

312. But the conception of society, as envisaged by the Prophet of Islam, has added another sanction, perhaps more efficacious than the material one, and that is the spiritual sanction. Maintaining all the administrative paraphernalia of justice, Islam has inculcated in the minds of its adherents the notion of resurrection after death, of Divine Judgement and salvation or condemnation in the Hereafter. It is thus that the believer accomplishes his obligations even when he has the opportunity of violating them with impunity, and he abstains from doing harm to others in spite of all the temptations and the enjoyment of security against the risk of retaliation.

313. This triple sanction - of rulers being equally subject to the general law, material sanctions and spiritual sanctions, each element of which strengthens the efficacy of the other - tries to secure in Islam the maximum observance of laws and the realization of the rights and obligations of all. It is more efficacious than a system in which only one of these sanctions are acquired.

The Legislation

Mega Lecture

314. In order to better understand the implication of the affirmation that God is the supreme Legislator, we have to think about different aspects of the question.

315. Islam believes in One God, Who is not only the Creator of all, but also the Sustainer, the *sine qua non* of the very existence of the universe. He is not "placed on the retired list" after having created what He has created. Furthermore, Islam believes that God is transcendent and beyond all physical perception of man, and that He is *omnipresent* [present everywhere], *omnipotent* [All-powerful] *just* and*merciful*. Moreover, in His great mercy, He has given man not only reason but also guides, chosen from among men themselves, instructed in the directions which are most wise and most useful to human society. God being transcendent [beyond reach or grasp of human experience], He sends His messages to His chosen men by means of intermediate celestial message-bearers.

316. God is perfect and eternal. Among men, on the contrary, there is constant evolution. God does not change His opinions, but He exacts from men only that which accords with their individual capacities. That is why there are divergences, at least in certain details, among various legislation, each of which claims to be based on Divine revelations. In legislative matters, the latest law abrogates and replaces all the former ones; the same is true of Divine revelations.

317. Among Muslims, the Qur'an, which is a book in the Arabic language, is the Word of God, a Divine revelation received by the Prophet Muhammad and destined for his adherents. Moreover, in his quality of being the messenger of God, Muhammad, of the holy memory, has explained the sacred text, and given further directions; and these are recorded in the *Hadith*, or the collection of the reports on the sayings and actions of the Prophet Muhammad.

318. It goes without saying that the laws promulgated by an authority can only be abrogated by itself or by a superior authority, but not by an inferior one. So a Divine revelation can be abrogated only by another posterior Divine revelation. Similarly the directions of the Prophet can only be modified by himself or by God, but not by any of his disciples or an other person. In practice, in Islam this theoretical aspect of rigidity becomes quite elastic in order to permit men to adapt themselves to exigencies and circumstances:

(i) The laws, even those of Divine origin or emanating from the Prophet, are not all of the same range. We have just seen that only some of these are obligatory, whereas others are only recommended, while in the rest of the cases, the law allows great latitude to individuals. A study of the sources shows that the rules of the first category, i.e., the obligatory ones, are very few in number. Those rules which are recommended are more numerous and cases where the text is silent are innumerable.

(ii) An inferior authority will not change the law, yet it may interpret it. The power of interpretation is not the monopoly of any person in Islam because every man who makes a special study of the subject has the right to do that. A sick man would never consult a poet, or even a laureate who has gained a Nobel prize . . . to con- struct a house, one does not consult a surgeon, but

Mega Lecture

instead consults an engineer. In the same way, for legal questions, one must study law and perfect one's knowledge of the subject for the opinion of persons outside the profession will only be speculative. The interpretations of the specialists show the possibility of adapting even the Divine law to circumstances. Since Muhammad (being the last of the prophets) has left this world (as all mortals must), there is no more possibility of receiving a new revelation from God to decide problems in the case of divergence of interpretations. Inevitably there must be a divergence of opinion on matters, since all men do not think in the same manner. It may be pointed out that judges, jurisconsults or other experts of law are all human beings, and if they differ among themselves, the public will follow the one who appears to be more authoritative. In a judicial litigation, the judge is obeyed, whereas in other cases, the schools of law obtain priority in the eyes of the adherents of their respective schools.

(iii) Prophet Muhammad has enunciated the rule. **"My people shall never be unanimous in an error,"** (reported by Ibn Hanbal, Tirmidhi, Ibn Majah and others). Such a negative consensus has great possibilities of developing Islamic law and adopting it to changing circumstances. The spirit of investigation is never strangled. On the contrary, this Hadith seems to lay down that every opinion which is not rejected unanimously will not involve excommunication.

(iv) A celebrated incident of the life of the Prophet Muhammad reported by a large number of sources, deserves mention:

Mu'adh ibn Jabal, a judge-designate of Yeman, paid a visit to the Prophet to take his leave before departure to take up office. The following conversation took place: "**On what basis shalt thou decide litigation?** - According to the provisions in the Book of God (the Qur'an)! - **And if thou dost not find any provision therein**? - Then according to the conduct of the Messenger of God (i.e., Muhammad)! - **And if thou dost not find a provision even therein?** - Well, then, I shall make an effort with my own opinion!" The Prophet was so delighted at this reply, that far from reproaching him, he exclaimed, "**Praise be to God Who hath guided the envoy of His envoy to what pleaseth the envoy of God!**"

This individual effort of opinion and common sense on the part of an honest and conscientious man is not only a means of developing the law, but also a recipient of the benediction of the Prophet.

(v) It may be remembered that in legislation on a new problem, in the interpretation of a sacred text, or in any other case of development of the Islamic law, even when it is occasioned on the basis of a consensus, there is always the possibility that one rule adopted by a process would later be replaced by another rule, by later jurists using the same process. Opinion of an individual by the opinion of another individual, a consensus by another consensus (cf. al-Pazdawi, Usul). (This refers to *opinions of jurists only*, and has nothing to do with the Qur'an or the authentic Hadith. For God's order can only be abrogated by God Himself, and by no-one else; a Prophet's order by a Prophet or by God, and not by an inferior authority of a jurist or a parliament).

Mega Lecture

319. History has shown that the power of "legislation" has been vested in Islam in private savants, who are outside official interference. Such legislation would neither suffer from the influence of daily politics, nor serve the interests of particular persons, even if they were heads of State. Each of the jurists, being all equal, them can freely criticise the opinion of the other, thus providing the possibility of bringing into relief all the aspects of a problem, either immediately or in the course of future generations, and so arrive at the best solution.

320. Thus one sees that the Divine origin of legislation in Islam does not render it rigid out of all proportion. What is more important still is that this quality of the Divine origin of law inspires in the believers an awe for the law, in order that it may be observed conscientiously and scrupulously. It may be added that the jurists of classical times have unanimously declared that, *"All that the Muslims consider good, is good in the eyes of God*" - even if it does not concern a saying of the Prophet himself. (To Sarakhsi it is a Hadith of the Prophet; Ibn Hanbal has known it as a saying of Ibn Mas'ud, the Companion of the-Prophet). The consensus, in the light of this interpretation, implies that even the deduction of lay savants, entails Divine approval, a fact which adds to the respect of law in the eyes of men.

Administration of Injustice

321. A characteristic feature of the Quranic legislation in this respect is the judicial autonomy accorded to different communities comprised of subjects. Far from imposing the Quranic law on everyone, Islam welcomes and even encourages every group, Christian, Jewish, Magian or other to have its own tribunals presided over by its own judges, in order to have its own laws applied in all branches of human affairs, civil as well as criminal. If the parties to a dispute belong to different communities, a kind of private international law decides the conflict of laws. Instead of seeking the absorption and assimilation of everybody in the "ruling" community, Islam protects the interests of all its subjects, (see paragraph 293).

322. As for the administration of justice among Muslims, apart from its simplicity and expediency, the institution of the "purification of witnesses" is worth mentioning. In fact, in every locality, tribunals organize archives regarding the conduct and habits of its inhabitants, in order to know, when necessary, whether a witness is trustworthy. It is not left only to the opposite party to weaken the value of an evidence. The Qur'an (24:4) has said that, if someone accuses the chastity of a woman and does not prove it according to the judicial exigencies, not only is he punished, but is also rendered, forever after to be unworthy of testimony before tribunals.

Origin and Development of Law

323. Prophet Muhammad taught theological and eschatological dogmas to his adherents. He also gave them laws concerning all activities of life, individual as well as collective, temporal as well as spiritual. In addition, he created a State out of nothing, which he administered, built up armies which he commanded, set up a system of diplomacy and foreign relations which he controlled; and if there were litigations, it was he who decided them among his "subjects." So, it is to him rather than anyone else that one should turn in order to study the origin of the Islamic

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

law. He was born into a family of merchants and caravan-leaders, who inhabited Mecca. In his youth he had visited the fairs and markets of Yemen and of Eastern Arabia, (i.e., 'Uman, cf. Ibn Hanbal IV, 206) as well as of Palestine. His fellow-citizens used to go also to Iraq, Egypt and Abyssinia with the object of trade. When he began his missionary life, the violent reaction of his compatriots obliged him to go into exile and settle down in another town, Madinah, where agriculture was the principal means of livelihood of its inhabitants. There he organised a type of state, the first a city-state was established, which was gradually transformed into a State which extended, at the time of his death, over the entire Arabian Peninsula together with some parts of Southern-Iraq and Palestine. International caravans traversed Arabia. It is well known that the Sassanians and the Byzantines had occupied certain regions of Arabia, and established colonies or protectorates. In some fairs, particularly of Eastern Arabia, merchants were attracted every year as far away as India, China, and "from the East and from the West" as Ibn al-Kalbi and al-Mas'udi have described. There were not only nomads in Arabia, but also settled people, of whom the Yemenites and Lihyanites had developed a civilization dating from before the foundation of the cities of Athens and Rome.

324. The customary laws of the country were transformed, when Islam came, into statal acts of legislation. And the Prophet had, for his adherents and subjects, the prerogative not only of modifying the old customs, but of also promulgating entirely new laws. His status as the messenger of God was responsible for the exceptional prestige he held. So much so that not only his words, but even his acts also constituted law for the Muslims in all walks of life. Even his very silence implied that he did not oppose a custom which was practised around him by his adherents. This triple source of legislation,*viz*., his words, which are all based on Divine revelation, his deeds, and his tacit approval of the practices and customs of his adherents, has been preserved for us in the Qur'an and the *Hadith*. While he was still alive, another source began to germinate, *viz.*, the deduction and elaboration of rules, in cases where legislation was silent, and this was done by jurists other than the head of the State. In fact there were judges and jurisconsults, in the time of the Prophet, even in the metropolis, not to speak of provincial administrative centres. We have already mentioned the instructions given to Mu'adh when he was sent to Yemen as Judge. There were cases when the provincial functionaries demanded instructions from the central government, which also took the initiative and intervened in cases of incorrect decisions of the subordinates, if and when they came to the notice of the higher authority. The order to change or modify the ancient customs and practices, or the Islamisation of the law of the whole country, could only take place gradually, because the judges did not intervene except in cases brought to their attention. Cases not brought to their attention, in which the parties acted in ignorance of the law, according to their convenience, must have been numerous. For instance, a Muslim had been married to his own German sister; when the case was brought to the caliph 'Umar and he asked the explanation from the person concerned, this latter replied that he did not know that it was prohibited. The caliph separated them and demanded the man to pay damages to his sister, yet he did not inflict punishment on account of fornication or incest.

325. The death of the Prophet marks the cessation of the Divine revelations which had the force of ordering every law, abrogating or modifying every old custom or practice. Thereafter the

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Muslim community was obligated to be content with the legislation already accomplished by the Prophet, and with the means of the development of law authorized by this same legislation. "Development" does not mean abrogation of what the Prophet had legislated, but to know the law in case of the law being silent.

326. Of these, the most important were perhaps the following: on several occasions, the Qur'an (4:24, 5:1) has, after instituting certain prohibitions, expressly added that all the rest was lawful (in the domain concerned). So, all that does not go against the legislation emanating from the Prophet is permissible, and constitutes good law. The laws and even customs of foreign countries have always served as raw material for the Muslim jurists, in order to detach from them those that were incompatible with Islam, the rest being lawful. This source is continuous.

327. Another source, surprising perhaps, is the direction given by the Qur'an (6:90) that the Divine revelations received by the former prophets (and it has named almost a score of them, such as Enoch, Noah, Abraham, Moses, David, Solomon, Jesus, John the Baptist) are equally valid for Muslims. But its range and scope was limited only to revelations, the authenticity of which was proved beyond doubt, that is, those recognized expressly by the Qur'an or the Hadith to be so. The law of retaliation of Pentateuch is an instance mentioned in the Qur'an (5:45), when it is precisely said: "*God has prescribed that on Jews*", without adding "*and on you*".

328. Only fifteen years after the death of the Prophet, we see the Muslims ruling over three continents, over vast territories in Asia and Africa and in Andalusia in Europe. Caliph 'Umar had judged the Sassanian fiscal measures to be good enough to be continued in the provinces of Iraq and Iran; the Byzantine fiscal measures he found oppressive, and changed it in Syria and Egypt; and so on and so forth. The whole of the first century of the *Hijrah* was a period of adaptation, consolidation and transformation. The documents on papyrus, discovered in Egypt, inform us of many aspects of Egyptian administration. From the beginning of the second century of the *Hijrah,* we possess codes of law, compiled by private jurists, one of the earliest of them being Zaid ibn 'Ali, who died in 120 A.H.

329. The ancients called Yemen "Arabia Felix," (as distinct from Arabia Petra and Arabia Deserta) and not without reason. The physical and other conditions had given it in pre-Christian antiquity an incomparable superiority over other regions of Arabia, as regards culture and civilization. Its wealth, as attested by the Bible, was legendary, and its kingdoms were mighty. At the beginning of the Christian era, a wave of emigration had led certain Yemenite tribes to Iraq, where they founded the Kingdom of Hirah, which was celebrated for its patronage of letters, and which continued to exist until the dawn of Islam. In the meanwhile, Yemen knew Jewish rule (under Dhu-Nuwas); Christian domination (under the Abyssinians) followed by the Magian or Parsi occupation of the Iranians, who in their turn yielded place to Islam. The Yemenites influenced by all these successive interactions and strains, were persuaded once again under Caliph 'Umar to emigrate to Iraq and populate it, particularly Kufah, which was a new town raised beside the old city of Hirah. 'Umar sent Ibn Mus'ud, one of the most eminent jurists from among the companions of the Prophet, to conduct a school there. His successors at the school, 'Alqamah an-Nakha'i, Ibrahim an-Nakha'i. Hammad, and Abu Hanifah were all, by providential

MegaLecture

chance, specialists in law. In the meantime, 'Ali, another great jurist among the companions of the Prophet, transferred the seat of the caliphate from Madinah to Kufah. Therefore it is not surprising that this town became the seat of uninterrupted traditions, and gained an ever-increasing reputation in matters of law.

330. The absence of all interference from the governmental authority in the liberty of the opinions of the judges and jurists proved greatly favourable for the rapid progress of this science; but it suffered from certain inconveniences too. In fact an experienced and high ranking administrator as Ibn-al-Muqaffa' complained in his *Kitab as-Sahabah* in the course of the second century of the *Hijrah,* of the enormous quantity of divergences in the Muslim case law, be that penal law, the law of personal status or any other branches of law, particularly in Basrah and Kufah: and he suggested to the caliph the creation of a supreme institution for the revision of the decisions of the judiciary and the imposition of a single, uniform law in all parts of the realm. The suggestion proved abortive. His contemporary, Abu-Hanifah, was jealous of the liberty of science, and solicitous of keeping it aloof from the turmoil of ever-changing politics. He created, instead, an academy of law. With its forty members, of whom each one was a specialist in a science auxiliary to law - such as the exegesis of the Qur'an, Hadith, logic, lexicology, etc. - this academy undertook the task of evaluating the case law of the time, and of codifying the laws: it tried also to fill up the gaps in Muslim law on points on which neither the text nor the precedents of the case law had pronounced any opinion. One of his biographers states that Abu- Hanifah (d. 150 H.) "had promulgated half a million rules" (cf *al-Muwaffaq*, 2/137) Malik at Madinah, and al-Auza'i in Syria, undertook at the same time a similar task, but they depended on their own solitary knowledge and personal resources. If Abu Hanifah laid an emphasis on reasoning (notwithstanding the recourse to the Qur'an and the Hadith as the basis of all law) Malik preferred the usage of the population of Madinah (a town impregnated with the traditions of the Prophet) to deduction or logical interpretation.

331. The Qur'an was "published" only a few months after the death of the Prophet. The task of collecting the data on the sayings and doings of the Prophet, as well as his tacit approval of the conduct of his companions (a material which is called Hadith) was undertaken by some persons in the life-time of the Prophet, and later by many others after the Prophet's death. More than a hundred thousand of the companions of the Prophet have left to posterity valuable traditions, based on whatever they remembered on the subject. Some put them down in writing (over fifty, according to the latest research) and others conveyed them orally. These materials of very high legal value were naturally dispersed in the three continents where the companions of the Prophet had gone and settled in the time of the caliphs 'Umar and 'Uthman. In the following generations, the researchers compiled treatises, even more comprehensive based on and amalgamating the collections of individual memoirs of the companions of the Prophet.

332. The evaluation of the case law and the codification of the *Hadith* were completed as parallel works at the same time, yet each ignored and was suspicious of the other. Ash-Shafi'i was born in the year in which Abu-Hanifah died. Mutual differences or disputes led the jurists to take greater cognizance of the *Hadith;* and the specialists of Hadith to put in order the data on the sayings and doings of the Prophet, to evaluate the individual merits of the sources of

Mega Lecture

transmission, and determine the context and time of the different sayings of the Prophet, for purposes of deducing the law therefrom. Ash-Shafi'i specialised simultaneously in law and in Hadith and thanks to his high intellectual qualities and his efforts, a synthesis was discovered between the two disciplines. Ash-Shafi'i is the first in world history to create an abstract science of law distinct from laws in the sense of rules applied in a country.

333. Another big school (or tradition) of law was founded by Ja'far as-Sadiq, a descendant of 'Ali and a contemporary of Abu Hanifah. Reasons of a political kind were responsible for the development of the law of inheritance in this school in a special manner. Abu Hanifah, Malik, ash-Shafi'i, Ja'far as-Sadiq and several other jurists each has left his school of law. The adherents of these schools form sub-communities of Islam in our age, yet the differences among them have an influence even less than that of the philosophic schools. With the passage of centuries, it has become a common experience to find that some Shafi'ites differ from ash-Shafi'i on certain points and hold the same opinion as Malik or Abu-Hanifah, and vice versa.

334. As we have just seen, the Muslim "empire" extended very early over immense territories, which were formerly governed by different legal systems, like the Iranian, Chinese, Indian, Byzantine, Gothic, and others, and to these were added the local contributions of the very first Muslims of Arabia. The possibility of any single foreign legal system having the monopoly of influencing Muslim law is therefore excluded. Among the founders of schools also we find that Abu-Hanifah was of Persian origin and Malik, ash-Shafi'i and Ja'far as-Sadiq were Arabs. The biographer adh-Dhababi reports that al-Auza'i was originally of Sindh. And in the subsequent generations there emerged Muslim jurists from all races. The development of Muslim law was therefore an "international" enterprise, in which Muslim jurists of very diverse ethnic origins, speaking different languages, and following different customs, have taken part. There were European Muslims from Spain, Portugal and Sicily, there were Chinese, Abyssinians, Indians, Persians, Turks and many others besides Arabs.

335. It is a phenomenon observed in all countries that certain extremists and those lacking in independent thought wish to sacrifice the spirit to the letter of the teaching of an old master, while others adventure into non-conformism. But it is the golden means that should always prevail! A spirit without an inferiority complex, but equipped with the necessary preparation in data, and endowed at the same time with the piety of a practising believer, will never encounter difficulty in finding interpretation practical, as well as reasonable, such as would even modify the opinion held by the ancients. With what confidence and assurance does the great jurist Pazdawi tell us that not only individual opinions, but even the consensus of former times can be replaced by a later consensus!

Conclusion

336. Muslim law began as the law of a State and of a ruling community and served the purposes of the community when the Muslim rule grew in dimension and extended from the Atlantic to the Pacific. It had an inherent capacity to develop and to adapt itself to the exigencies of time and clime. It has not lost its dynamism even today, in fact it is obtaining more and more

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

recognition as an agency for good, by Muslim countries which were formerly under foreign political - and therefore juridical - domination, and are trying to reintroduce the *Shar'iah* in all walks of life.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Chapter No: 10

The Economic System of Islam

ISLAM provides guidance to its adherents in all phases and activities of life, in matters material as well as spiritual. Its basic teaching with regard to economics is mentioned in several passages of the Qur'an. Far from despising material well-being, it recognizes (4 : 5) that, ". . . *your goods which God has made as the very means of your subsistence* . . . ."; and it orders, "*and neglect not thy portion of this world*" (28 : 77). It lays emphasis , however, on the dual composition of man, by reminding him thus: ". . . *but of mankind is he who saith, 'Our Lord! give unto us in this world; and he hath no portion in the Hereafter. And of them is also he who saith*, '*Our Lord! give unto us what is good in this world and what is good in the Hereafter, and guard us from the doom of Fire. For these there is in store a goodly portion out of that which they have earned: God is swift at reckoning*." (2 : 200-2). In other verses we find it stated plainly and definitely that, all that is found on the earth, in the seas and the heavens has been created by God for the benefit of man; or that all that is on the earth, in the heavens, the ocean, the stars and others have been made subservient to man by God. It means for man to know and to profit by the creation of God, and profit in a rational way, paying due regard to the future.

338. The economic policy of Islam has also been explained in the Qur'an in the most unequivocal terms: ". . *. so that this (wealth) may not circulate solely among the rich from among you. .* . ." (Q. 59 : 7) Equality of all men in wealth and comfort - even if it is ideal - does not promise to be of unmixed good to humanity. First because natural talents are not equal among different men, so much so that even if one were to start a group of persons with complete equality, the spendthrift will soon fall into difficulties and will again look on the fortune of his comrades with greed and envy. Further, on philosophic and psychological grounds, it seems that in the very interest of human society, it is desirable that there should be grades in wealth, the poorer having the desire and incentive to work harder. On the other hand, if everybody is told that even if he works more than what is required of him as his duty, he would get no reward and would remain as those who do not do more than their duty, then one would become lazy and neglectful, and one's talent would be wasted to the great misfortune of humanity.

338/a. Everyone knows that human livelihood is in constant progress, through the domination and exploitation one after the other of all those things that God has created, whereas one sees that the rest of animals have changed nothing in their livelihood ever since God created their species. The cause of this difference, as discovered by biologists, is the simultaneous existence of a society - a co-operation, and a liberty of competition inside the members of the society, i.e., human beings. Whereas other animals suffer from the lack of some or all of these requisite conditions. Dogs, cats and snakes for instance do not create even a family, for they perpetuate their race by means of free and momentary "love". Others, such as crows and pigeons do create a family in the form of couples yet even if the male helps in the construction of the nest, each member in the 'couple' depends on its own gain for its livelihood. Perhaps the most developed social co-operation is found among bees, ants and termites (white ants). They live in

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

a collective way, with complete equality in livelihood, yet without any competition among its members, and consequently it is not possible for the more intelligent or more industrious bee to live more comfortably than others. For this reason there is neither evolution nor change, much less progress in any of these species, as against the human race. The past history of man shows that every advance and every discovery of the means of comfort came into existence through competition and desire for improvement, and also through the existence of grades of wealth or poverty among men. Yet, absolute liberty would lead devilish men to exploit the needy, and draw them out gradually. So it was necessary for every progressive civilization and every healthy culture to impose certain duties on its members (such as the to pay taxes, the interdiction of having recourse to oppression and cheating, etc.), and to recommend certain supererogatory acts (like charity and expenditure for the sake of God), yet to nevertheless have a great deal of liberty of thought and action to its members, so that each one benefits himself, his family, his friends and the society at large. This is the exigency of Islam, and it also conforms to nature.

339. It is on the basis of this fundamental principle that Islam has constructed its economic system. If it tolerates the minority of the rich, it imposes on them heavier obligations: they have to pay taxes in the interest of the poor, and they are prevented from practising immoral means of exploitation, hoarding and accumulation of wealth. For this end there will be some orders or injunctions, and also some recommendations -- for charity and sacrifice -- with the promise of spiritual (other-worldly) reward. Further it makes on the one hand, a distinction between the necessary minimum and the desirable plenitude, and on the other hand between those orders and injunctions which are accompanied by material sanctions and those which are not so, but for which Islam contents itself with persuasion and education only.

340. We shall describe first in a few words this moral aspect. Some illustrations would enable us to better understand its implications. Most emphatic terms have been employed by Islam to show that to beg charity of others is something abominable, and it would be a source of shame on the day of Resurrection. Yet simultaneously, unlimited praise has been bestowed on those who come to the aid of the others, the best of men being in fact those who make a sacrifice and prefer others to their own selves. Similarly avarice and waste are both prohibited. One day the Prophet of Islam had need of considerable funds for some public cause. One of his friends brought a certain sum to offer as his contribution, and on the demand of the Prophet, he replied: "I have left at home nothing but the love of God and of His messenger." This person received the warmest praise from the Prophet. Yet on another occasion, another companion of his, who was seriously ill, told him when he came to inquire about his health: "O messenger of God! I am a rich man, and I want to bequest all that I possess for the welfare of the poor." The Prophet replied, "**No; it is better to leave to thy relatives an independent means of livelihood than that they should be dependent on others and be obliged to beg.**" Even for two-thirds and for a half of the possessions the remark of the Prophet was, "**that is too much**." When the proposal was submitted to give one-third of the property in charity, he said: "**Well, even the third is a large amount**." (cf. Bukhari). One day the Prophet saw one of his companions in miserable attire. On enquiry, he replied: "O messenger of God! I am not at all poor; only I prefer to spend my wealth on the poor rather than on my own self." The Prophet remarked: "**No; God**

Mega Lecture

likes to see on His slave traces of the bounty that He has accorded him! " (cf. Abu Da'wud and Tirmidhi). There is no contradiction in these directions; each has its own context and relates to distinct individual cases. We are afforded an opportunity of determining the limits of the discretionary choice in excess of the obligatory minimum, *vis-à-vis* the other members of society.

Inheritance

341. Both the individual right of disposing of one's wealth and the right of the collectivity *vis-à-vis* the wealth of each individual, in as much as one is a member of society, have to be simultaneously satisfied. Individual temperaments differ enormously. Sickness or other accidents may also affect a man out of all proportion. So it is necessary that a certain discipline should be imposed upon him in the interest of the collectivity.

342. Thus Islam has taken two steps: firstly the obligatory distribution of the goods of a deceased person among his close relatives, and secondly a restriction on the freedom of bequest through wills and testaments. The legal heirs do not require any testamentary disposition, and inherit the property of the deceased in the proportions determined by law. A testament is required solely in favour of those who have no right to inherit from a deceased person.

343. There is equality in the parents of the same category, and one cannot award to one son (elder or younger) more than to the other -- whether major or minor. The first charges on the property left by the deceased are the expenses of his burial. What remains then goes to his creditors, the debt having priority over the "rights" of the inheritors. In the third place, his testament is executed, to the measure and extent that it does not exceed the third of the available property (after burial and payment of debts). It is only after satisfying these prior obligations that heirs are considered. The (male or female) partner of life, the parents, the descendants (sons and daughters) are the first class heirs, and inherit in all cases. Brothers and sisters, and other more remote relatives inherit from a deceased person only in the absence of nearer relatives. Among these more remote relatives, we find uncles, aunts, cousins, nephews and others.

344. Without entering into technical details, certain basic rules may be described. A homicide is excluded from the inheritance of his own victim, even if the court decides that it was a case of death by involuntary accident. The underlying idea seems to be to prevent all temptation to kill a rich relative in view of an earlier inheritance. The Prophet has also prohibited inheritance among relatives of different religions, even between the husband and wife. However, the right of donating gifts and testament can be availed of in this respect. The Muslim husband, for instance, may bequest, even on his death-bed, a part of his property in favour of his non-Muslim wife. On the strength of the international and political conditions of their times, the classical Muslim jurists have instituted another hindrance, *viz*., the difference of the territory (i.e., political nationality) as barring inheritance. Evidently the statal treaties may regulate the question of private international law, in a contrary sense, on the basis of reciprocity.

Mega Lecture

345. In countries where the Islamic law of inheritance is not applied by governments, yet the right of testament is recognized, the Muslim inhabitants can (and must) utilize this facility, in order to fulfill their religious duty with regard to the disposition of their property after their death.

Wills

346. We have just mentioned that the right of testamentary bequests is operative only within the limits of a third of the property, in favour of persons other than creditors and heirs. The aim of this rule seems to be two-fold: (1) To permit an individual to adjust things, in extraordinary cases, when the normal rule causes hardship; and a third of the property is sufficient for fulfilling all such moral duties. (2) Another motive of the law of the will is to prevent the accumulation of wealth in the hands of a few, a thing which would happen if one should give all this property, by will, to a single person excluding totally one's near relatives. Islam desires the circulation of wealth among as large a number of people as possible, taking into account the interests of the family.

Public Goods

347. One also has obligations as a member of a larger family, *viz.*, society and the State in which one lives. In the economic sphere, one pays taxes, which the government redistributes in the interests of the collectivity.

348. The taxation rate differs according to the various kinds of the sources of income, and it is interesting to note that the Qur'an, which gives precise directions with regard to budgetary expenditure, has enunciated neither rules nor rates of the income of the State. While scrupulously respecting the practice of the Prophet and of his immediate successors, this silence of the Qur'an may be interpreted as giving a latitude to the government to change the rules for income according to circumstances, in the interest of the people.

349. In the time of the Prophet, there were agricultural taxes, and the peasants handed over a tenth of the harvest, provided it was above a certain taxless minimum and irrigated their lands with rain or spring water, and half that rate in the case of wells as the means of irrigation. In commerce and exploitation of mines, one paid 2½% of the value of goods. As for import taxes on foreign caravan-leaders, there is an interesting fact which should profitably be brought into relief. In the time of the Prophet, these were subject to a tithe as customs duty. The caliph 'Umar reduced by half this tax on foreigners, concerning certain categories of victuals imported in Madinah (as reported by Abu 'Ubaid). This precedent of high authority casts light on the essential principles of the fiscal policy of Islam. In the time of the Prophet, there were taxes on herds of camels, sheep and goats, and oxen provided they were fed on public pastures and exceeded in number the taxless minimum. Exemption was accorded further to beasts of burden and those employed for ploughing and irrigation.

350. There was a tax of 2½% on savings on silver and gold. This obliged people to employ their wealth for increase, and not to indulge in idle hoarding.

Mega Lecture

351. The Qur'an (9:60) has prescribed the principles regulating the budget of State expenditure in Islam, in the following terms: "*Verily the* ***sadaqat*** (i.e., taxes on Muslims) *are only for the needy, and the poor, and those who work for these* (taxes)*, and those whose hearts are to be reconciled, and to free the necks* (i.e., slaves and prisoners of war), *and the heavily charged, and in the path of God, and for the wayfarer -- a duty imposed by God; God is Knower, Wise*." These eight heads of expenditure, which cover practically all the needs of a collective, need elucidation to enable the understanding of their exact range and application.

352. The term *sadaqat*, which we translate as the State tax on Muslims, and which is a synonym of *zakat*, signifies all the taxes paid by Muslims to their government, in normal times, whether on agriculture, mines, commerce, industry, pasturing herds, savings or other heads. These exclude the provisional taxes imposed in abnormal times, the revenues levied on non-Muslims - subjects or foreigners and also all the non-obligatory contributions. Juridical literature of early Islam, and particularly the sayings of the Prophet, leave no doubt that the term *sadaqat* was employed in this sense. It did not refer at all to alms, which can be neither obligatory nor determined as to the quantity and the time of payment. The equivalent for alms is *infaq fi sabil Allah*, expenditure in the path of God, or *tatauwu'*: voluntary charity.

353. The first two categories of the needy (*fuqara*) and the poor (*masakin*), which are almost synonymous, have not been explained by the Prophet; hence there is a divergence of opinion. According to sayings and constant practice of the caliph 'Umar (recorded by Abu Yusuf in his Kitab-al-Kharaj and Ibn Abi Shaibah in his *Musannaf*), *fuqara* are the poor among the Muslims, and *masakin* are from among the non-Muslims residing in the Islamic territory, such as Jews. In his *Futuh al-Buldan*, Baladhuri cites another case of the same caliph, who awarded pensions to Christians of Jabiyah (Syria) from the*sadaqat*, i.e. *zakat* revenues. The jurist ash-Shafi'i thought that the terms were absolutely synonymous, and that God, out of His bounty, named them twice in order to make a double provision. According to this authority, as each of the eight heads in the Quranic verse should receive one-eighth of the State income, the poor would receive two-eighths. Be it what it may, the first duty of the State is to see that no dweller on the Islamic soil is deprived of the means of livelihood: food, dress, lodging, etc.

354. The next item concerns the salaries of the functionaries: collectors, accountants, controllers of expenditure, auditors of accounts etc. If the truth is to be told, this category comprises the entire administration, civil, military and diplomatic, as one can see in the description of the categories of the beneficiaries. The historian al Baladhuri (in his *al-Ansah*) has preserved a document in which the caliph 'Umar demands of his governor of Syria: "Send us (to Madina) an expert Greek, who may put in order the accounts of our revenues." (*hisaba fara'idina*). We require no better authority for asserting that the non-Muslims could not only be employed in the administration of the Muslim State, but also be beneficiaries of the *sadaqat* levied exclusively on Muslims.

355. The category of those whose hearts are to be reconciled can more easily be understood by the modern term "secret funds." In his *al-Ahkam* as-Sultaniyah, the jurist Abu-Ya'la al-Ferra' says: "As to those whose hearts are to be won, they are of four kinds: (1) Those whose hearts

Mega Lecture

are to be won for their coming to the aid of the Muslims; (2) or for abstaining from doing harm to Muslims; (3) for inviting them to embrace Islam; and (4) for inviting through them their clans and families to embrace Islam. It is lawful to spend on each and every one of these whether they be Muslims or polytheists."

356. By the term "*freeing the necks*," one has always understood two kinds of expenditure: the liberation of slaves, and ransoming of the prisoners of war in the hands of the enemy. According to the Islamic law (Qur'an 24:33), every slave has the right to purchase his emancipation by paying his value to his master; and in order to earn the necessary amount, he may compel his master to give him facilities to work, and during this period he is not required to serve his master. Moreover, as we have just seen, it is the duty of the government to allot every year in the budget a certain sum for aiding the slaves to buy their freedom. A document of the time of the Umaiyad caliph 'Umar ibn 'Abdal-'Aziz (reported by Ibn Sa'd) says that the payment of the ransoms by the Muslim government includes liberating even the non-Muslim subjects who would have been made prisoners by the enemy.

357. The category of those who are heavily charged has, according to the practice of classical times, a whole series of applications. One helped those who had suffered from calamities such as floods, earthquakes, etc. It does not refer to the poor, who have already been mentioned in the beginning of the verse, but to the well-to-do who have suffered from abnormal conditions, beyond their power. Caliph 'Umar started a special section in the Public Treasury, in order to lend money, free of interest, to those who had temporary needs and provided the necessary guarantees for repayment. The caliph himself had recourse to it for his private needs. It goes without saying that the "nationalization" of lending without interest was the necessary concomitant of the prohibition of interest in Islam. The same caliph used to lend public money even to merchants for fixed periods and the Treasury participated with them in a percentage of their business returns. They participated not only in gains but even in the event of losses. Another application of this State expenditure was for a kind of social insurance. If somebody was found guilty of involuntary homicide, and was unable to pay the blood money required by law out of his own means, the government came to his help under this heading of the budget, as is evidenced by several cases of the practice of the Prophet. We shall revert to this later in detail.

358. The expression "in the path of God," in the Islamic terminology, signifies, in the first instance, military defence and the expenditure for the personnel, equipment, etc. But the term applies in fact to all sorts of charitable works, such as helping students, grants and aids in religious causes such as the construction of mosques, etc.

359. The last category concerns communications and tourist traffic in a wide sense: construction of bridges, roads, hotels, restaurants, security of routes (police included), hygienic arrangements, transport of travellers, and every comfort provided to aliens in the course of their journeying, including extending hospitality to them without charge and in proportion to the means available. Formerly such hospitality was assured for three days in every place of stay.

MegaLecture

360. In order to appreciate the merit of these Quranic dispositions, one must remember that the time was the very beginning of Islam, fourteen centuries ago. There is not much that could be added to these headings of expenditure. They seem to be well applicable to our own times in a progressive welfare State, having concern for the well-being of its subjects.

Exceptional Taxes

361. The *sadaqat* were the only taxes of the State in the time of the Prophet and the Orthodox Caliphs. In later times, on occasions of extraordinary need, the jurists have admitted the legal possibility of imposing supplementary charges, on a strictly provisional basis, for occasional exigencies. Such taxes are called *nawa'ib* (calamities).

Social Insurance

362. Only risks involving heavy charges form objects of insurance, and these differ according to the times and social conditions. Among the Arabs at the commencement of Islam, daily ailments were unknown and the cost of medical care was practically nothing. The average man built his house with his own hands, and did not pay even for the major part of the material. Thus it is easy to understand why one had no need of insurance against sickness, fire etc. On the contrary, insurance against captivity and against assassination were a real need. Already in the time of the Prophet, this point had received attention, and certain dispositions were made which had the elasticity of further development and adaptation to circumstances. Thus, in the Constitution of the City-State of Medina of the first year of the*Hijrah,* this insurance is called *ma'aqil* and it worked in the following manner. If someone was made a prisoner of war by an enemy, payment of ransom was needed to procure his liberation. Similarly, all bodily torts or culpable homicides required payment of damages or blood money. This often exceeded the means of the individual concerned, prisoner or criminal. The Prophet organized an insurance on the basis of mutuality. The members of a tribe could count on the central treasury of their tribe, to which everybody contributed according to his means. And if the treasury of the tribe proved inadequate, other related or neighbouring tribes were under obligation to render aid. A hierarchy was established for organizing the units into a complete whole. At Medina, the tribes of the Ansarites were well known. The Prophet ordered the Meccan refugees there, who belonged originally to the various tribes of Mecca, or were Abyssinians, or Arabs belonging to different regions, to all constitute a new "tribe" of their own, for purposes of the said social insurance.

363. Later in the time of the caliph 'Umar, the branches of insurance were organized on the basis of the profession, civil or military administration, to which one belonged (or even of regions). Whenever needed, the central or provincial government came to the succour of the branches, as we have described above when speaking of State expenditure.

364. Insurance signifies essentially the repartition of the burden of an individual on as many as possible, in order to lighten the burden of each. Instead of the capitalistic companies of insurance, Islam preferred organising insurance on the basis of mutuality and cooperation, aided by a pyramidal gradation of the branches culminating in the central government.

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

365. Such a branch could engage in commerce with the help of unutilized funds remaining at its disposal, so that the capital is augmented. A time might come, when the members of a branch could be fully exempted from paying further contributions, or might even receive amounts of the profits of commerce. It goes without saying that these elements of mutual aid could insure against all kinds of risks, such as accident of traffic, fire, loss in transit, and so on. Also, it goes without saying that the insurance business is capable of being "nationalized" for all or certain kinds of risks (i.e. temporary motives such as the dispatch of parcels, etc.).

366. Without entering into technical details, it may be pointed out that capitalistic insurance, in which the insured person does not participate in the benefits of the company in proportion to his contributions, is not tolerated in Islam as this would constitute a form of game of chance.

367. In passing, we might mention another social institution of the time of the caliph 'Umar. He had organized a pension system for all the inhabitants of the country, and according to the *Kitab al-Amwal* of Ibn Zanjuwaih and *ar-Risalahal-'Uthmaniyah* of al-Jahiz, even non-Muslim subjects were among the beneficiaries of these pensions - so much so that as soon as a child was born, he began to receive a certain pension. The adults received the minimum necessary for living. In the beginning, the caliph practised a certain discrimination amongst the different categories of the pensioners, and if the minimum was one, the most favoured person received forty; yet towards the end of his life, he decided to observe complete equality, but he died before this reform could be introduced. This institution, named "*Diwan*," by 'Umar, seems to have originated in the very time of the Prophet, as the following report implies: "The basis of this practice is the narration that the Prophet named Mahmiyah ibn Jaz' to be in charge of the governmental fifth of the booty captured on the Banu'l-Mustaliq; and in fact Mahmiyah was in charge of the governmental fifth of all booties. The *sadaqat* (*zakat* taxes) were controlled separately and had their own particular administration. However, peaceful revenues from the enemy (*fay'*) were administered by separate functionaries. The prophet used to spend the *sadaqat* on orphans, the weak and the poor. If the orphan reached puberty and military service (*Jihad*) became his duty, he was transferred from the list of the beneficiaries of the sadaqat to that of the fay'. If he refused to render military service, he would not benefit any more from the *sadaqat* and was commanded to earn his livelihood himself." (cf. Sarakhsi. Sharh as-Siyar al-Kabir, ed. Munajjed. 1978).

Games of Chance

368. In prohibiting these, the Qur'an (5:90) has characterized them as the "work of Satan" for cogent reasons. It is recognized that most social evils emanate from the bad distribution of the national wealth wherein some individuals become too rich and others too poor and as a result, they fall victim to exploitation by the rich. In games of chance and lotteries, there is great temptation for quick and easy gain - and so often easy gain is bad for society. Suppose that in horse racing (and other forms) and in either public or private lotteries, as well as all other games of chance, the people of a country spend 3 million pounds every week (as is the case in certain countries) in the course of only ten years, a sum of 1,560 millions of pounds will be collected from a very large number of the inhabitants and redistributed among a ridiculously small number

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

of people. Less than one percent of the people thrive at the expense of the remaining 99 per cent. In other words, the 99 per cent are impoverished in order to enrich the 1 per cent so that one creates one per cent of millionaries by systematically ruining the other 99 per cent. Whether games of chance, including lotteries, are private or nationalized, the evil of accumulating wealth in the hands of the few at the expense of a very vast majority, works with full force. Hence the total prohibition of games of chance and lotteries in Islam. As in capitalistic insurance, games of chance bear one-sided risks.

Interest on Money-lending

369. Probably there is no religion in the world which has not prohibited usury. The distinctive trait of Islam is that not only has it forbidden this kind of gain, but it has also remedied the causes leading to the existence of this evil institution in human society:

370. Nobody pays willingly an interest on what he borrows: he pays only because he requires money and he finds that he could not get it without paying interest.

371. Islam has made a very clear distinction between commercial gains and interest on money-lending. The Qur'an (2:275) says: ". . . *God permitteth trading and forbiddeth interest*. . ." A little later (2:279), it says: "*If you do not give up (interest), then be warned of war against God and His messenger; and if ye repent, then ye shall have your principal, (without interest); neither ye wrong nor be wronged*."

372. The basis of the prohibition of interest is also the unilateral risk. For when one borrows a certain sum for earning an increase by the rich. In games of chance and lotteries, there is a great temptation for quick and easy gain, it is possible that circumstances should not have been propitious enough for earning sufficiently to be able to pay the promised interest, the lender not participating in the risks of the exploitation.

373. It is not possible to compel an individual to deprive himself of his money, in order to lend it to others gratuitously and without interest. We have pointed out that Islam has ordered that one of the charges on State income is the obligation of helping those who are heavily charged. Hence, the Public Treasury organized interest-free loans, in addition to and for supplementing the loans offered by charitable men or organizations, to help those who are in need of them. The principle is mutual aid and cooperation.

374. In the case of commercial loans, there is also the system of *mudarabah*, in which one lends money and participates equally in gains as well as in risks. If, for instance, two individuals form a company, each one furnishing half of the capital and labour, then the distribution of the profit is not difficult. However, if the capital comes from one party and the labour from the other, or if the two furnish the capital though only one of them works, or the proportions of the partners' share are not equal, in such cases a reasonable remuneration of the labour, on the basis of the previously agreed conditions is taken into consideration before the distribution of gains and profit is effected. Of course all possible precautions are taken, in order to prevent risks, yet

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Islam demands that in all contractual negotiations, the profit as well as the loss should be shared by both the contracting parties.

375. As far as the banks are concerned, their activities are principally of three kinds (i) remitting of amounts from one place to another, (ii) assuring safety of the savings of the clients, and (iii) lending money to others on profit. The expenses of the functioning are borne by those who utilize the service of banks. The question remains of loans for commerce, industry or any other trade motive. If the bank participates in the profit of its debtors as well as in their risks, Islam allows such banking activities, otherwise not.

376. Confidence is born of confidence. If the savings banks of a government declare at the end of the year (and not at its beginning) that they are in a position to pay such and such percentage of profit to the clients, not only would this be lawful according to Islam, but the public also would have no hesitation in depositing its savings with governmental banks, in spite of the silence in the beginning with regard to the quantity of the expected profit. For one has confidence in the public administration.

377. To sum up, the principle of mutual participation in profits as well as in risks must be observed in all commercial contracts.

Statistics

378. In all planning, it is necessary to have an idea of the available resources. The Prophet organized the census of the Muslim population, as al-Bukhari informs us. In the caliphate of 'Umar, the census of beasts, fruit-trees, and other goods was organized; and cultivable lands were measured in the newly-acquired provinces. With a large spirit, full of concern for the well-being of the public, caliph 'Umar had the habit of inviting representatives of the people of different provinces, after the collection of taxes, to find out if they had any complaint against the behaviour of the collectors during the year.

Daily Life

379. We may end this brief sketch by mentioning two prohibitions of considerable importance, which form in fact characteristic features of the daily life of a Muslim - games of chance and alcoholic drinks. We have had the occasion to discuss games of chance, in which one spends sometimes continually during the course of years without obtaining anything in return. What a loss to those who are economically weak! The use of alcohol has the peculiarity that its consumption in a small quantity makes one gay and weakens his resolution to drink no more. And when one becomes drunk, one has loses control over one's acts. One may then squander money without noticing it. To these evils may be added the unhygienic effects of alcoholic beverages which are transmitted in the children and their progeny also. One of the Quranic verses (2:219) speaks of it in interesting terms: "*They question thee about wine and games of chance; say: in both is great sin and some profits for men; but the sin of them is greater than their usefulness*." (Qur'an 2:219).

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

The Qur'an does not deny that there are certainprofits in the use of alcohol, still it declares it a sin against society, against the individual himself, and of course against the Legislator. In another verse (5:90) it relegates it to the same level as idolatry, and decares it to be the handiwork of Satan. It adds that if one desires to be happy in both worlds, one should abstain from games of chance and alcoholic beverages.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Chapter No: 11

The Muslim Woman

When studying the principal rights and obligations of women in Islam, it must be pointed out at the very outset, that in spite of a capacity of Muslim law to adapt itself and to develop according to circumstances, there will be no question that one will recognize the extreme liberty that a woman enjoys today both in fact and in practice. She enjoys this liberty in certain sections of social life, both in the capitalistic and the communistic West. Islam demands that a woman should remain a reasonable being. It does not expect her to become either an angel or a demon. "The golden means is the best of things," said Prophet Muhammad. If one wants to compare or contrast her position in Islam with that in other civilizations or legal systems, one should take into consideration all the facts, and not merely isolated practices. In fact, in regard to certain aspects of morality, Islam is more rigid and more puritan than certain other systems of life in our times.

Women's Personal Status in Islam

As a mother

381. The position of a mother is exalted in Islamic tradition. Prophet Muhammad has gone so far as to say: "Even Paradise lies underneath the feet of your mothers." Al-Bukhari reports: Somebody asked the Prophet which work pleases God most? He replied "The service of worship at the appointed hour." And when it was continued: "And what afterwards?" the Prophet replied: "To be bounteous to your father and mother." The Qur'an refers to this often, and reminds man that he must always keep in mind the fact that it was his mother who had borne him in her womb, suffered much on his account and brought him up after making all kinds of sacrifices.

As a wife

382. As regards the woman as wife, the saying of the Prophet is well known: "The best among you is the one who is bet towards his wife." In his memorable Farewell discourse, pronounced on the occasion of the Last Pilgrimage, the Prophet spoke of women at length, and said in particular:

"Well then, people! Verily there are rights in favour of your women which are incumbent upon you, and there are rights in favour of you which are incumbent upon them. As to what is incumbent upon them in your regard, is that they should not let your beds be trampled by other than you, should not allow those to enter your houses whom you do not like without your authorization, and should not commit turpitude. If they do commit that, then God has given you permission to reprimand them, to separate yourself from

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

them in beds, and to strike them but not hard. If they abstain and obey you, then it is incumbent upon you to provide their food and dress in accordance with good custom. And I command you to treat women well, because they are like captives in your houses, possessing nothing for themselves, and you, on your part, take them as a deposit from God, and permit yourselves the enjoyment of their persons by means of a word of God. Have therefore the fear of God with regard to women, and I Order you to treat them well. Attention! Have I communicated? O God, be witness!"

As a daughter

383. With regard to woman as daughter, the Islamic attitude can be guessed from the reproaches which the Qur'an makes against the pagan, pre-Islamic behaviour at the birth of daughters: *"And they assign unto God daughters - be He purified (from this)! - and unto themselves what they desires (i.e., sons); and when if one of them receiveth tidings of the birth of a female, his face remaineth darkened, and he is wroth inwardly. He hideth himself from the folk because of the evil of what whereof he hath tidings, (asking himself); Shall he keep it in contempt, or bury it beneath the dust? Verily evil is their judgment."*[Qur'an 16:57-59]. The Qur'an reminds ceaselessly that God has created all things in pairs, and for procreation both the sexes are equally indispensable, each one having its particular function. And it proclaims: " . . . *unto men a fortune from that which they have earned, and unto women a fortune from that when they have earned*." [Qur'an 4:32]

Equality of Women - Equal to man in certain respects and not so in certain others

384. To avoid redundancy, Nature has not willed perfect equality among the two sexes, but a complementary distribution of avocations and functions. For instance, it is not possible for a man to conceive a baby; similarly the natural attributes of men cannot be exercised by women. She has a more delicate physical constitution, her voice will be more melodious and less sonorous, and she will have a taste more in conformity with the need to conserve this delicacy. Men however are more robust and will have greater strength and are therefore more endowed to engage in the more painful parts of life. To each will be according to his or her requirements, both natural and reasonable.

384. If there is a certain natural inequality between the two sexes, in many other aspects of life they resemble each other. Therefore their rights and obligations in those domains will also be similar.

386. This sums up, in a way, the Islamic teaching on woman: she is considered equal to men in certain respects but not so in certain others. This could be understood better in the description of her obligations and her rights which follows.

Women's Obligations

Mega Lecture

Religious duties

387. In religious matters, her first duty, even as that of man, is to believe in the oneness of God, which is the only means of salvation in the Hereafter. One knows that Islam has formally prohibited the use of compulsion to convert anybody to Islam - and it may be recalled, by the way, that a non-Muslim wife of a Muslim man has the full right to conserve her religion and to practise it in her individual capacity in wedlock - and one also knows that inside the Muslim community, a rigorous discipline is maintained for its conservation as a whole and the preservation of its system of life. Treason in this respect is punished, yet certain cases of the time of Orthodox Caliphs show that the punishment of women on account of apostasy is less severe than that of men.

388. Among the Islamic religious practices, it is incumbent upon women, as also upon men, to celebrate the services of worship [*salat*/prayers] though with certain concessions. An adult woman is exempt during several days every month from performing the daily services of worship. As to the congregational prayer of Friday, it is optional for her, while it is obligatory for man. The rigour of fasts is also lightened to her; and at the moment of child-birth, monthly courses, etc., she has the right to postpone her fasts of the month of Ramadan. With regard to *Hajj* (pilgrimage to Mecca) also, there are certain rights from which she is exempted, if she cannot perform them for feminine reasons. To be brief, Islam is lenient and considerate to her. As to last of the basic duties, *viz.,* the payment of her zakat tax, she has equality with man, though certain schools of law - the Shafi'ite for instance - make her certain concessions. So, there is a tax on the savings, yet the savings converted by a woman into ornaments of personal use are exempt from tax. In spite of the fact that Islam lays emphasis on the constant circulation of the national wealth for the purpose of continually increasing it, and discourages hoarding by subjecting it to a tax, it has nevertheless made a concession in favour of women and their feminine tastes.

Social duties

389. There also social duties. With a view to distribute the national wealth equitably, the means leading to the accumulation of wealth in the hands of the few are forbidden, as is the case of interest and games of chance. A Muslim woman is as much subject to these rules as a man. Lotteries and speculations on racing, etc., are harmful to the economic equilibrium of society, and remain expressly forbidden to both men and women.

390. Let us recall another source of numberless misfortunes and that is alcohol. It is the express duty of every Muslim to abstain from it. The Qur'an [5:90] calls it the work of Satan. Its physiologic, economic, moral and other evils are well known and so will not be discussed here. Alcoholic beverages have a particular aspect concerning the woman: It is she who nourishes her baby with her blood, and then with her milk, thus transmitting her health or her ailment to her baby, to the next generation and to the future of humanity.

Moral duties

MegaLecture

391. A very comprehensive duty is that of morality. If spirituality is our duty in our relations with out Creator, morality has the same place in our mutual relations with our fellow-beings. In its ardent desire to attack the very sources of evil, not merely certain of its manifestations, Islam has imposed, recommended, or otherwise encouraged certain practices, which can astonish us sometimes if we do not take into consideration their profound motives. All religions say that fornication and adultery are crimes, but Islam goes further and prescribes the means to diminish temptation. It is easy to hope that everyone would develop one's individual morality in order to resist the temptations, but it is wiser to diminish the occasions in which persons with weak characters (who constitute the majority of the human race) need to engage in a battle where defeat is a foregone conclusion.

392. Thus the Qur'an [33:59] first exhorted women 'to put on their *jalabib*' (a sort of cloak or overall covering from head to foot), in order to diminish the occasions of attraction to protect them from the wickedness of men, as the Qur'anic verse explains. Then came the revelation [24:30-31] for behaviour inside the house with friends and visitors: "*Tell the believing men to lower their gaze and be chaste; that is purer for them; lo! God is aware of what they do. And tell the believing women to lower their gaze and be chaste and to display of their adornments only that which is apparent, and to draw their khumur* (veil covering the face) *over their bosoms* . . ." In every epoch of Islamic history, including the time of the Prophet, one sees Muslim women engaged in every profession that suited them. They worked as nurses, teachers, and even as combatants side by side with men when necessary, in addition to being singers, hair-dressers, etc. Caliph 'Umar employed a lady, Shifa' bint 'Abdallah, as inspector in the market at the capital (Medina), as Ibn Hajar (*Isabah*) records. The same lady had taught Hafsah, wife of the Prophet, how to read and write. The jurists admit the possibility of women being appointed as judges of tribunals, and there are several examples of the kind. In brief, far from becoming a parasite, a woman could collaborate with men, in Muslim society, to earn her livelihood and to develop her talents.

The veil does not at all signify seclusion, but it does diminish the temptation that could draw untoward glances from strangers.

393. According to the Qur'an [30:21]: "*And of His signs is this: He created for you helpmates from yourselves that ye may find rest in them, and He ordained between you love and mercy*." Women and men mutually form complements of one another [see Qur'an 2:187]; therefore they should accommodate one another for their mutual interest. Two equals cannot be in accord with each other in a hundred percent of cases; mutual concessions would be needed in the interests of the home and for the better comprehension inside the family. The counsel of the Qur'an [4:19], given to the husband regarding the treatment of the wife, provides food for thought: " . . . *but consort with them in kindness, for if ye hate them it may happen that ye hate a thing wherein God hath placed much good*." In fact, the wiser one is, the greater the concession one makes, especially when one is also more powerful.

394: One seeks and prefers for the purpose of marriage the person one loves. But the question of love has quite a gloomy history in the annals of man. The motives of love, especially among

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

the young, are often fantastic and ephemeral: a sweet voice, a delicious manner of smiling, the eyes, the colour, the coiffure or any other passing gesture starts the drama. However, for true conjugal life this does not suffice. Prophet Muhammad has given us a very wise counsel in this respect: "**Do not marry only for the sake of beauty; may be the beauty becomes the cause of moral degrada tion. Do not marry even for the sake of wealth; may be the wealth becomes the reason of insubordination. Marry rather on the grounds of relgious devotion**", (Ibn Majah, No. 1859). As the Islamic religion regulates all domains of life, it goes without saying that the one who observes scrupulously one's religious duties is the one more apt to create peace at home. On another occasion, the Prophet said, "**The world is an ephemeral thing, of which one takes temporary advantage; and among the worldly things nothing is better than a good (pious) wife.**" (*idem*. No. 1855) At-Tirmidhi and an-Nasa'i report another saying of the Prophet: "**The perfect believer is the one who has a perfect character and is kind to one's wife**."

395. As we have just remarked, Islam attaches particular importance to morality. Hence it is that promiscuity is ordered to be suppressed by every means. According to the Qur'an (4:34): if one fears immorality *nushuz*, (cf. 382) on the part of one's wife, one should first admonish, then exert pressure by separating the beds, and finally may even scourge, though not heavily. If there is no means of reform, divorce - which has been characterized as "**the most detestable among the lawful things,"** by the Prophet - may solve the problem. This obligation of chastity is reciprocal. A little later, the Qur 'an (4:12 8-30) says that if a woman fears immorality (*nushuz*) or indifference, on the part of her husband, she should try to arrange things, and at last resort she too has the right to demand judicial separation.

395/a. A good mutual understanding implies identical views of the couple. This may take place at time spontaneously, i.e., both husband and wife arriving at the same conclusions. Wheras on other occasions one of the couple will have to make the concession and to renounce his personal opinion. However there is a limit to it, and one should not be astonished that the Qur'an [29:8] and the Hadith prescribe "**No obedience to a creature in the disobedience of the Creator."** One is allowed to make concessions of all sorts, by love or for simple expedience, provided that this does not affect the formal law of Islam, above all the religious injunctions should on no account be violated.

395/b. One thing was very dear to the Prophet, and he talked of it on several occasions, that men should avoid effeminate practices, and that girls should not behave like boys in coiffure, in dress, in the manner of talking and so on. One should rather develop one's self in the natural direction, and not in the opposite way; otherwise it is the "curse of God" which shall befall the person who violates this direction, as a hadith mentions.

Women's Rights

396. The pre-Islamic Arabs attached less importance to a woman's person than to that of a man. Thus, if the culprit was a man and the victim a woman, retaliation would not take place. The Qur'an abolished this inequality, and edicts against the woman were placed on the same

Mega Lecture

level as those against the man, whether they concerned persons or property or honour. One may even say that in certain cases, the rights of women are held to be more important. For instance, the Qur'an [24:4-5] decrees that if a man accuses a woman of immorality and does not produce proof, he is exposed not only to the penalty prescribed for a false accusation, but to be declared for perpetuity as unworthy of giving an evidence before a tribunal (this in addition to the Divine punishment in the Hereafter, which however, may be effaced in case of repentance). There is almost a consensus of opinion that repentance effaces the sin in the eschatological sense, yet the incapacity of evidence remains constant in spite of the recognized repentance effaces the sin in the eschatological sense, yet the incapacity of evidence remains constant in spite of the recognized repentance. The Qur'an seems to require the purging of society from the evil of inconsiderate talk, particularly in matters where injury is easy to inflict and difficult to remedy.

397. The perfect and complete individuality of the person of the woman is manifest in a most striking manner in the matter of property. According to Islamic law, the woman possesses a most absolute right over her property. If she has attained majority, she may dispose of it according to her will without reference to anybody else, whether it be her father, brother, husband or son or any other person. There is no difference in this matter between a man and a woman. The property of a woman cannot be touched even if her husband or father or any other relative has liabilities exceeding his assets. Similarly, these relatives are not held responsible if she contracts debts. A woman has the same rights as a man for acquiring property. She may inherit it, receive it as a give or donation, earn it by her own work and toil; and all this remains hers and hers alone. She is absolute mistress of her property to enjoy it or to give it to whomsoever she likes as a give, or to dispose of it, by sale or any other legal means, at her will. All these gifts are inherent in a woman; there is no question of obtaining them through special contracts, with the husband for instance or by an award depending on somebody else.

Rights of Inheritance

398. The right to inheritance requires some explanation. A pre-Islamic Arab woman did not have the right to inherit from anybody, either her father or even her husband. The Prophet did not pay attention to this question during the first fifteen years of his mission. The chroniclers mention that in the year 3 H., a rich Ansaraite, Aus ibn Thabit died, leaving a widow and four daughters of tender age. According to the Medinan customs, only male adults, capable of taking up arms in a war, had the right to inheritance; so even a minor son had no right to the property of his deceased father. So the cousins of Aus took possession of all that he had left, and the family became overnight completely destitute and deprived of the means of livelihood. At that moment, a passage of the Qur'an was revealed, promulgating the law of inheritance which has been practiced by Muslims ever since, and even by some communities, such as the Christians of the Levant. According to this law [cf. Qur'an 4:7-12 and 4:176], different female relatives have obtained the right to inheritance: wife, daughter, mother and sister in particular. With regard to inheritance, Islam makes no difference between the moveable and immovable property; everything must be divided amongst the rightful heirs. In order to avoid evil caprices, Islam has also prohibited the bequest of property by testament to strangers and the deprivation of the near

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

relatives. In fact, these latter do not require to be mentioned in a will; they inherit automatically. A will cannot even diminish or increase the rights of individual relatives to inheritance, the rights being fixed and determined by the law itself. The will is valid solely in favour of "strangers." i.e., those who have not right to inherit directly the property of the deceased. Islam has fixed the maximum, which one can bequeath by will, and that is one-third of the whole property, the two-thirds going to near relatives. A will for more than one-third is valid only if the heirs unanimously accept it at the moment of the distribution of the heritage.

399. The law of inheritance is complicated enough, for the shares of different heirs vary according to individual circumstances: the daughter alone or in the presence of a son, the mother alone or in the presence of the father, with children or without them, the sister alone or in the presence of the brother, father or children of the deceased, inherit in different proportions according to individual cases. It is not our intention to describe it here in full detail. The shares of female heirs, may however, be mentioned briefly. The wife gets one-eighth if the deceased also leaves a child; otherwise she gets a quarter. The daughter when alone gets a half, whereas several daughters get two-thirds which they divide amongst themselves in equal proportions; - all this where there is no son. In the presence of a son, the daughter gets half of her brother. [1] The mother, when alone, gets one-third; in the presence a father, child or brothers and sisters of the deceased, she gets one-sixth. The sister does not inherit if the deceased leaves a son; but when alone, she gets a half; two or more sisters get two-thirds which they divide amongst themselves equally. In the presence of a daughter, the sister gets one-sixth; in the presence of a brother, she gets the half of what he gets. There are also differences between the shares of full sisters, consanguine and uterine sisters.

400. It is perhaps necessary to give an explanation justifying the inequality between sister and brother, between mother and father, and between daughter and son. It seems that the Legislator has taken into consideration the rights of women in their entirety, together with fact that the laws are frames for normal cases of life and not for rare exceptions (for which latter. Exceptional means are always provided). We have already mentioned that the woman possesses her property separately, on which neither her father nor her husband nor any other relative exercises any right whatsoever. Further, in addition to this separation of her proprietary rights, she has the right to maintenance (food, dress, lodging, etc.); and the court obliges her father, husband, son, etc. to satisfy on their sole expenses these needs of the woman. Again, the woman obtains from her husband the *mahr*, a contractual sum which went before Islam to the father of the woman, but which in Islam remains vested exclusively in the woman herself. This *mahr* is not a dowry, which is not an obligatory thing. *Mahr* is a necessary element without which no marriage is valid. Thus it will be seen that a woman has lesser material needs to satisfy on her own account than a man, who has heavier obligations. In such conditions, it is easy to understand that a man has the right to a greater part of heritage than a woman. It should be remembered that, in spite of the fact that the woman has the right to be maintained at the expense of others, Islam accords her a supplementary right to property in the form of inheritance. It goes without saying that a good household requires mutual co-operation, and the woman also works to increase the income of the family, or to diminish the expenses which would follow if she does work; but we are speaking of the rights of woman, and not of the social

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

practices which may vary according to individuals. The notion of the maintenance goes so far in Islam, that, according to the law, a wife is not obliged even to give her breast for suckling; it is the duty of the father of the child to procure for it a foster mother at his own expense, if the mother does not want to suckle the infant.

Marital Practices

401. Let us speak of marriage, which also raises numerous questions. Marriage, according to Islam, is a bilateral contract based on the free consent of the two contracting parties. The parents certainly aid by their counsel and their experience in searching or selecting the companion of life for their child, yet it is the couple who have the last say in the matter. In this respect there is no difference between man and woman, in so far as the law is concerned. **Illegal practices may exist in varying degrees from region to region and class to class; but the law does not recognize the customs which contravene its provisions.**

402, While it is true that Islam permits polygamy, it is on this point that Muslim law is more elastic and more in harmony with the requirements of society than the other systems of law which do not admit polygamy in any case. Supposing there is a case, in which a woman has young children, and falls chronically ill, becoming incapable of doing the household work. The husband has no means of employing a maid-servant for the purpose, not to speak of the natural requirements of the conjugal life. Supposing also that the sick woman gives her consent to her husband to take a second wife, and that a woman is found who agrees to marry the individual in question. Western law would rather permit immorality than a legal marriage to bring happiness to this afflicted home.

403. In fact, Muslim law is nearer to reason. For, it admits polygamy if the woman herself consents to this kind of life. The law does not impose polygamy, but only permits it in certain cases. We have just remarked that it depends solely on the agreement of the woman. This is true of the first wife as well as the second one in prospect. It goes without saying that the second woman may refuse to marry a man who has already one wife; we have seen that no one can force a woman to enter into a marriage tie without her own consent. If the woman agrees to be a "co-wife" it is not the law which should be considered as cruel and unjust with regard to women and as favouring only men. As to the first wife, the act of polygamy depends on her. For, at the time of her marriage, she may demand the acceptance and insertion, in the document of the nuptial contract, or the clause that her husband would practise monogamy. Such a condition is as valid as any other condition of a legal contract. If a woman does not want to utilize this right of hers, it is not legislation which would oblige her to do that. We have just spoken of exceptional cases; and the law must have possible remedies. Polygamy is not the rule, but an exception; and this exception has multifarious advantages, social as well as other - the details would be burdensome here - and Islamic law need not be shy of this elasticity.

404. In the religious law of antiquity, there was no restriction on the number of wives a man could have. All the Biblical prophets were polygamous. Even in Christianity which has become synonymous with monogamy, Jesus Christ himself never uttered a word against polygamy. On

Mega Lecture

the other hand, there are eminent Christian theologians, like Luther, Malanchthon, Bucer, etc., who would not hesitate to deduce the legality of polygamy from the parable of the virgins spoken of in the Gospel of Matthew (25:1-12), for Jesus Christ envisages there the possibility of the marriage of one man with as many as ten girls simultaneously. If Christians do not want to profit by this permission (which the founder of their religion seems to have given them) [2], the law is not changed for all that. This is true of the Muslims also, whose law , moreover, is the only one in history which expressly limits the maximum permissible number of polygamous wives. (For Christian theory and practice, as well as for general discussion, cf. Westermarck, *History of Human Marriage*, 3 Vols.)

405. The possibility of the annulment of a marriage has also existed in Muslim law since all time. There is the unilateral right, acquired by a husband, to divorce his wife. The wife also may acquire a similar right while contracting the marriage. The court of justice also possesses the right of separation of the couple on the plaint of the wife, if the husband is incapable of fulfilling his conjugal duties, or if he is suffering from a particularly serious sickness, or if he disappears for years without leaving a trace, etc. Further, there is also the bilateral separation, when the two mates agree mutually, on conditions, to discontinue their marital tie. The Qur'an [4:35] insists that the two should refer their quarrels to arbitration before deciding for definite separation. The saying of the Prophet may be remembered: **"The most detestable of the permitted things in the eyes of God is divorce."** The law, the ethics, and the exhortations, complement each other; and the source of all these is the same, namely the Qur'an and the Hadith.

Addendum

In passing, one might also note that in this respect, women were generally well-treated even in the pre-Islamic society of Arabia They enjoyed the privilege of possessing property in their own right, they gave their consent to marriage contracts in which they could even add the condition of **reserving their right to divorce their husbands.** They could re-marry when widowed or divorced. Burying girls alive did exist in certain classes, but that was rare. (See Chapter 9 of Introduction to Islam)

As to the law relating to delegation of the right to divorce and the three kinds of delegation, refer to Ch. III of *The Hidaya*: (English Translation by Hamilton) "Where a husband delegates, or commits the pronouncement of divorce to his wife, desiring her to the effective sentence, and it is comprehended under three different deeds, termed (1) Option *(ikhtiar) (*2) Liberty (*amar bil-yad)* (3) Will (*mashiyyat)*."

"Such power may be granted generally too - if a husband says to his wife, "Divorce yourself, when you please", she is at liberty to divorce herself either a) on the spot, or b) at any future time - this is being a TRANSFER OF POWER; (*not a commission of agency)*, the husband **may not retract.** That is to say, after being thus empowered, she stands as a **principal** in the

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Mega Lecture

execution of divorce, and **not** as an**agent**; and a commission of agency may be annulled at pleasure, whereas, the power devolved to another to act as a principal cannot be so.

"On the contrary, if a man says to another, "divorce my wife", the person thus addressed may divorce her either upon the spot or at any other time, and the husband *may also retract*, because this a commission of agency, and therefore is *not absolute*, nor restricted in point of place."

One may divide human actions, first of all, into good and evil, represented by orders and prohibitions. The acts from which one must abstain are also divided into two big categories: 1) those against which there is *temporal sanction* or *material punishment* in addition to condemnation on the day of the Final Judgment, and 2) those which are condemned by Islam **without providing a sanction** other than that of the hereafter.

But there are also injunctions against particular evils. As has already been remarked, there are those which accompany a sanction and the public punishment, and those regarding which there is only a warning of punishment in the Hereafter, and except in cases of extraordinary gravity, the **public authorities do not take cognizance of them.**

Entirely different is the case of fornication and adultery. For the consent of the parties does not attenuate its gravity. The Prophet had so greatly succeeded in developing justice and self-criticism among his companions that they preferred the severest public punishment in this world to the one in the Hereafter; and they presented themselves voluntarily before the Prophet, to confess their sins and submit themselves cheerfully to the legal sanctions. Outside confession, it is always very difficult to prove illicit sexual relations if the parties were willing. In order to diminish the temptation, Islam has taken other precautions also: prohibition of promiscuity, of easy and unsupervised meetings between the young of opposite sexes if they are not near relatives, and even the recommendation of the veil to cover the face of the woman if the goes out in the street or meets strangers. Far from attracting the gaze of amorous strangers by her coquetry, it is the duty of a Muslim woman to reserve her beauty and her attraction only for her husband. The veil has other advantages also for the woman. One knows the great difference between the exterior of those women who work in the fields, for instance, and of those who are not exposed to the sun. One knows also the difference between the outer and inner feathers of a bird. In fact the veil preserves for a longer time the charm and freshness of the skin. One can see that plainly on comparing the skin of the face or hands with that of other parts of the body which are habitually covered. The veil does not at all signify seclusion, but it does diminish the temptation that would attract strangers. It is abusing the credulity of the simpleton to make-believe that covering the face with a veil generates tuberculosis. This disease is as prevalent among people where womenfolk never use the veil, not only in Black African, but even in the most highly developed societies from Finland to Italy, as the latest research has brought to light. In passing, it may be mentioned that there is no legal penalty for the neglect of this Quranic recommendation.

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Chapter No: 12

The Status of non-Muslims in Islam

IT IS NATURAL that one should make a distinction, and even discrimination, between the near and the distant and between the relative and the stranger. With intellectual and moral evolution there is a tendency in human society to facilitate the assimilation of the foreigner. If a society were to group itself solely on the basis of blood relationships, naturalization would be out of the question for ever. The same is true if the basis were the colour of skin, which cannot be concealed. Language as a factor of social unity requires long years for a veritable assimilation. Place of birth is even less perceptible in a stranger, and ever since man had crossed the horizon of city-states, not much importance has been attached to this last factor. However, one would remark that in all these various conceptions of social unity, the basis is a mere accident of nature, and belongs more to the animal instinct than to the rationality of man. It is common knowledge that Islam has rejected all these notions of nationality and selected only the identity of ideas - a thing which depends on the choice of man and not the accidents and hazards of birth - as the basic tie of society and the factor of union. Naturalization and assimilation in such a society is not only easy and accessible to all human races in their entirety, but it is also closer to reason and more practical, showing how to live one's life in peace and tranquillity.

407. If a believer in God or a capitalist is considered as a stranger in communist countries, a black-skinned in such white countries as practice social segregation, or a non-Italian in Italy, it should not be surprising if a non-Muslim should be considered as a stranger in the land of Islam. Conceptions, or rather angles of view, differ, yet everybody makes some distinction or other between those who belong to his own group and those who do not.

408. As in other political or social systems, Islam also makes a distinction between its "relatives" and "strangers," but there are two characteristics peculiar to it:(1) the facility to cross this barrier by subscribing to its ideology, and (2) but little inequality between the two categories regarding the affairs of this world. We shall try to throw some light on this last aspect of the question.

Divine Origin of Duties

409. One should not forget the great practical importance attached to the fact that Muslims obey their system of law as something of Divine origin, and not merely the will of the majority of the leaders of the country. In this latter case, the minority enters on a struggle so that its own conceptions may prevail. In the democracies of our time, not only do the majorities often change from election to election but are also constituted or disintegrated by all sorts of commutations and combinations, and the party in power tries to upset the policy pursued by its predecessors, causing, among other changes, the modification of laws. Without entering here into the question of the adaptability of Islamic laws to the exigencies of social evolution, one might deem it as an incontestable truth that there is greater stability in the Muslim law - due to the Divine origin - than in any other secular legislation of the world with the following result :

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

410. The Islamic law ordains justice to, and observation of certain rules regarding the non-Muslims. These therefore feel no apprehension in the face of political quarrels and parliamentary elections of the country of their residence, with regard to the Islamic laws in force. The ruler or parliament cannot modify them.

Basic Notions

411. The believers and nonbeliever's cannot be equals, the former will go to Paradise, and the latter to hell, but all this concerns the Hereafter. As to the life in this world, Muslim jurists like ad-Dabusi and others have at all times revealed the greatest equality compatible with their system between "relatives" and"strangers," as we shall presently see.

412. There is the question of religious tolerance. The Qur'an (2:256) prescribes that there should be no compulsion in religion. The residing subjects as well as the temporary sojourners have an assurance regarding their safety and the liberty of their conscience.

413. There is the question of hospitality and asylum, regarding which the theoretical position is strengthened by the practice of more than a thousand years. There is the well-known verse of the Qur'an (9:6): *"And if anyone of the pagans seeketh thy asylum (O Muhammad), then give him asylum . . . and afterwards convey him to his place of safety . . ."* The victims of racial, religious, political and other persecutions have always found refuge and shelter in the land of Islam.

[What a touching and even stupefying teaching is the command that a Muslim should collaborate even with the enemy in the state of war! Says the Holy Qur'an (5:2) " . . . *and let not the hatred of a people who have stopped your going to the Inviolable Mosque (of the Ka'bah) incite you to transgress*; *but help ye one another unto charity and piety. Help not one another unto sin and transgression. Lo! God is severe in punishment."* Mutual help is not to be restricted among Muslims alone, but with entire humanity without restriction of religion and race!--Editor]

Practice of the Prophet

414. When the Prophet Mohammed settled down in Medina, he found there complete anarchy, the region having never known before either a State or a king to unite the tribes torn by internecine feuds. In just a few weeks, he succeeded in rallying all the inhabitants of the region into order. He constituted a city state, in which Muslims, Jews, pagan Arabs and also probably a small number of Christians, all entered into a statal organism by means of a social contract.

415. The constitutional law of this first 'Muslim' State - which was the confederacy as a sequence of the multiplicity of the population groups - has come down to us *in toto*, and we read therein not only in clause 25: "to Muslims their religion, and to Jews their religion," or, "that there would be benevolence and justice," but even the unexpected passage in the same clause 25: "the Jews . . . are a community (in alliance) *with* - according Ibn Hisham and in the version of Abu-'Ubaid, a community (forming part) *of* - the believers (i.e., Muslims)."

Mega Lecture

416. The very fact that, at the time of the constitution of this city-state, the autonomous Jewish villages acceded of their free will to the confederal State, and recognized Muhammad as their supreme political head, implies in our opinion that the non-Muslim subjects possessed the right of votes in the election of the head of the Muslim State, at least in so far as the political life of the country was concerned.

417. Military defence was, according to the document in question, the duty of all elements of the population, including the Jews. This implies their participation in the consultation, and in the execution of the plans adopted. In fact section 37 laid down: "the jews would bear their expenses and the Muslims theirs, and there will be mutual succour between them in case an aggressor attacks the parties to this Document." Further section 45 says that war and peace will be indivisible for the parties to the Document.

418. Some months after the establishment of this City-State, we see the Prophet Muhammad concluding treaties of defensive alliance and mutual aid with the pagan Arabs of the neighbourhood of Medina. Some of them embraced Islam about ten years afterwards. During all those long years, mutual confidence was most complete, as the following incidents will show.

419. In the year 2 AH, the pagans of Mecca sent a diplomatic mission to Abyssinia, in order to demand of the Negus the "extradition" of Meccan Muslims who had taken refuge in his country. To counteract their machinations, the Prophet also sent, in his turn, an ambassador for interceding with the Negus in favour of the Muslims who had sought asylum in his country due to religious persecution by their co-citizens. This ambassador of Islam was 'Amr ibn Umaiyah ad-Damri, "who had not yet embraced Islam." In fact, he belonged to one of the Allied tribes of the neighbourhood of Medina just referred to.

420. At a time when there were constant wars on extensive frontiers of the Islamic territory, military service was very far from being an easy means of earning a livelihood, the risks to life and to the economic situation of the combatants were very real. Even if the exemption of the non-Muslim subjects from this service was motivated by the suspicions in regard to their trustworthiness, all non-Muslims who had accepted Muslim domination and did not seek its overthrow in collusion with foreigners welcomed this exemption from military service. They could thus pursue in tranquillity their avocations and prosper, while the Muslims would be engaged in military duties with all the attendant risks. So, the non-Muslims paid little supplementary tax, the *jizyah* - of which the women, children and the poor from among them were exempt - which was neither heavy nor unjust. In the time of the Prophet, the *jizyah* amounted to ten dirhams annually, which represented the expenses of an average family for ten days. Moreover, if a non-Muslim subject participated in military service during some expedition in a year, he was exempted from the *jizyah* for the year in question. Some typical cases will show the real character of this tax.

421. In the beginning of Islam, this tax did not exist in the Muslim State, in either Medina or elsewhere. It was towards the year 9 AH that the Qur'an ordained it. That it was a question of expediency, and not a matter of dogmatic duty in Islam, is sufficiently shown by the following

Mega Lecture

incidents. It is reported (by Ibn Sa'd on the authority of Zuhri) that at the moment of the death of his son, Ibrahim, the Prophet Mohammed declared: "Had he survived, I would have exempted all the Copts from the *jizyah*, as a mark of esteem for Ibrahim's mother. (Who was a Coptic girl). Or again, (cf. Suyuti *Husn al-Mahadarah*, ch. Khalij Amir al-Mu'minin), when a non-Muslim Egyptian laid before the Muslim government the project of re-digging the ancient canal from Fustat (Cairo) down to the Red Sea, thus facilitating the maritime transport of Egyptian food stuffs to Medina - the famous *Nahr Amir al-Mu'minin* - the caliph "Umar rewarded him by exempting him from *jizyah* during his entire life. There are jurists who opine that one should also take into consideration the international repercussions affecting Muslim interests, in view of the fact that Islam has penetrated countries which are under non-Muslim domination; and the *jizyah* territory would inevitably produce a reaction on Muslims in Christian and other countries.

422. There is another saying of the Prophet which was pronounced on his death bed and which directs the transfer of the Jewish and Christian populations of the Hijaz to other regions; its context has not been mentioned in the traditions, but it is evident that it concerned certain populations of this region on account of their political behaviour, and that it was not a general prohibition against the members of these two communities. It may be noticed that, in the time of the caliphs, there were non-Muslim slaves, male and female, belonging to Muslims and living along with their masters, at Mecca, Medina, etc. A celebrated case of free non-Muslims is that of the Christian doctor, whose consultation rooms were just below the minaret of the mosque of the Ka'bah (*Mecca)*. He lived there in the time of "Umar ibn 'Abd al-'Aziz or soon after him (cf. Ibn Sa'd, V. 365 - Da'wud ibn 'Abdur Rahman. In fact Da'wud was a pious Muslim, yet his physician father remained a Christian). Ibn Sa'd (III/i, p.258) also records the case of a Christian, Jufainah, who taught reading and writing to school children in Medina.

423. We may also recall the direction of the Prophet on his death bed: "Observe scrupulously the protection accorded by me to non-Muslim subjects. Another saying of the Prophet reported by Abu Da'wud is: "whoever oppresses non-Muslim subjects, shall find me to be their advocate on the day of Resurrection (against the oppressing Muslims)."

424. The directions as well as the practice of the Prophet constitute the highest law for Muslims. As to the assimilation of these laws into the life of Muslims and practice of later times, a study of history could profitability be pursued. We shall referr to a few facts here.

Later Practice

425. A governor of the Caliph 'Umar selected a non-Muslim secretary. Learning the news, the Caliph issued an order to have him replaced by a Muslim. This refers to a time when the province in question had not yet been purified, and a war was still in progress. This is understandable in view of the importance of the post and the natural mistrust of the inhabitants of the newly conquered country. Moreover this governor was an illiterate person. In order to better comprehend the attitude of 'Umar, let us recall another incident of the same great caliph (reported by al-Baladhuri, *Ansab*): "One day he wrote to his governor of Syria: Send us a Greek,

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

who could put in order the accounts of our revenues." He put a Christian at the head of this administration, in Medina.

426. The same Caliph often consulted non-Muslims on military, economical and administrative questions.

427. One would not reproach Muslims for preserving the post of the *imam* (the leader of the prayer-service in the mosque) exclusively for their co-religionists. Islam has desired the coordination of all aspects of life, spiritual as well as temporal. Hence, the fact that the leading of the prayer-service in the mosque is a duty and privilege of the head of state who is also head of the religion. If one takes into consideration this state of things, one will understand easily why a non-Muslim subject cannot be elected head of a Muslim State.

428. But this exception does on no account imply the exclusion of non-Muslim subjects from the political and administrative life of the country. Ever since the time of the caliphs, non-Muslims have been seen holding the rank of ministers in Muslim States. A parallel practice has not been witnessed in the more important secular democracies of the world, where Muslim subjects are not lacking. That this practice of the caliphs is not contrary to the teaching of Islam, is borne witness to by classical authors, and Shafi'ite jurists (like al-Mawardi) and Hanbalite one's (like Abu Ya'la al-Farra') have not hesitated to support the view that the caliph may lawfully nominate non-Muslim subjects as ministers and members of executive councils. We have already spoken of a non-Muslim ambassador sent by the Prophet himself to Abyssinia.

Social Autonomy

429. Perhaps the most characteristic feature of Islam, in its attitude regarding the non-Muslims, is the award of social and judicial autonomy. In a long passage of the Qur'an, we read:

"*If then they have recourse unto thee (O Muhammad), Judge between them or disclaim jurisdiction; if thou disclaimest jurisdiction, then they cannot harm thee at all; but if thou judgest, Judge between them with equity; lo! God loveth the equitable. How can they come unto thee for judgment when they have the Torah, wherein is contained the judgment of God? Yet even after that they turn away; such folk are not believers. Lo! We did reveal the Torah, wherein is guidance and a light, by which the prophets who surrendered (unto God) judged the Jews, and the rabbis and the priests judged by such of God's Scripture as they were bidden to observe, and thereunto they were witnesses; so fear not mankind, but fear Me, and barter not My revelations for a little gain;* ***whoso judgeth not by that which God hath revealed: such are disbelievers.*** *And We prescribed for them therein the life for the life, and the eye for the eye, and the nose for the notes, and the ear for the ear, and the tooth for the tooth, and for wounds retaliation; but whoso forgoeth it (by way of charity) it shall be expiation for him; whoso judgeth not by that which God hath revealed: such are wrong doers. And we caused Jesus, son of Mary, to follow in their footsteps, confirming that which was revealed before it in the Torah - a guidance and an admonition unto those who are God-fearing.* ***Let the people of the Gospel***

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Mega Lecture

***judge by that which God hath revealed therein**; whoso judgeth not by that which God hath revealed; such are evil-livers. And unto thee (O Muhammad) have We revealed the Scripture with the Truth, confirming whatever Scripture was sent before it, and a watcher over it: so judge between them by that which God hath revealed, and follow not their desires away from the truth which hath come unto thee: for each We have appointed a Divine law (Shari'ah) and a traced-out way; had God willed, He could have made you one community, but He may try you by that which He hath given you (He hath made you as you are); so vie one with the other in Good works; unto God ye will all return, and He will then inform you of that wherein ye differ."* [Qur'an 5:42-48]

430. It is on the basis of this amendment, that the Prophet and his successors in Islam have conceded to every non-Muslim community, from among subjects of the Islamic state, a judicial autonomy, not only for personal status, but also for all the affairs of life - civil, penal, and others. In the time of the Orthodox Caliphs, for instance, we find evidence of contemporary Christians (for text cf. *infra* 497) attesting to the fact that the Muslim government had delegated in favour of Christian priests, many temporal judicial powers. In the time of the 'Abbasid caliphs, we find the Christian patriarch and the Jewish*hakham,* among the highest dignitaries of state, connected directly with the Caliph.

431. In the time of the Prophet, the Jews of Medina had their *Bait al-Midras* (both a synagogue and educational institute*).* In the treaty with the Christians of Najaran (Yaman), the Prophet gave the guarantee not only for the security of the person and property of the inhabitants, but had also expressly left the nomination of bishops and priests to the Christian community itself.

432. There is a tendency among a large number of people to imitate and ape their governors and chiefs in the outer conduct of life such as dress, coiffure, etiquette, etc. The result is a superficial assimilation, which brings no advantage to the ruling community, but which causes a moral damage to the classes which imitate in a servile manner. In an Islamic State, non-Muslims constitute a protected community (*dhimmi*). Therefore it is the duty of the government to protect the legitimate interests of these "strangers." Hence that we see, during the 'Abbasid caliphate that, far from seeking the assimilation of "strangers" by force, the government discouraged all imitation of one by the other: Muslims, Christians, Jews, Magians and others conserved by their own modes of dress, their social manners and their distinctive individualities. Only a total assimilation, for religious conversion, was sought, and not a confusion of communities. This is proof enough that the measure had nothing to do with the religious exigencies of Islam - and in the time of the Prophet there was absolutely no trace of it - but a condition of life, suiting the social conceptions of the epoch: and its essential purpose was to recognize, at the very first sight, the religious community of each and every individual. The intention was to protect in this way the culture of everyone, so that its intrinsic values and defects should come more into relief. In passing, it may be repeated that the conception of nationality in Islam is based neither on an ethnic source nor on the place of birth, but on the identity of ideology, i.e., of religion.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

433. The person, property and honour of every individual, whether indigenous or heterogenous, are fully protected in the Islamic territory. The *Sharh al-Hidayah*, which is a legal manual of current use, employs, for instance, the characteristic expression: "Defamation is prohibited, be it concerning the Muslim or a Protected (non-Muslim)." Another jurist of great authority, the author of *al-Bahr ar-Rai'iq says:*"even the bones of the dead among the Protected (non-Muslims) have the right to be respected, even as the bones of Muslims. It is not allowed to profane them, because if the ill treatment of a Protected (non-Muslim) is forbidden in his life-time, on account of the protection which he enjoys, the protection of his bones against every profanation is equally obligatory after his death." The jurists are unanimous in declaring that, if a Muslim violates a non-Muslim woman, he will receive the same punishment as is prescribed against the violation of Muslim women.

434. In the time of the caliph 'Umar, certain Muslims had usurped a piece of land belonging to a Jew, and had constructed a mosque on the site. Learning the news, the caliph ordered the demolition of the mosque and the restoration of the land to the Jews. Prof. Cardahi (a Christian of Lebanon, in a series of lectures on Private International Law of Islam, delivered at The Hague, 1933) writes, "this house of the to *Bait al-Yahudi*, still exists and is well-known." Another classical example, cited by Ibn Kathir and others is that of the Grand Mosque of Damascus. An Umaiyad caliph had occupied the church to enlarge the Mosque. Later when the complaint was brought before caliph 'Umar ibn 'Abd al-'Aziz, he ordered that part of the mosque to be built on the usurped piece of ground be demolished and the church restored there. But the Christians themselves preferred a monetary compensation and the matter was thus amicably be settled.

435. Let us cite the circular of the caliph '"Umar ibn 'Abd al-'Aziz, (preserved by Ibn Sa'd, V. 280), which is eloquent testimony:

"With the name of God, the Most Merciful, the All Merciful. From the Servant of God, Commander of the Faithful, 'Umar (ibn 'abd al-'Aziz) to (the governor) 'Adi ibn Artat and to the believing Muslims in his company: Peace be with you. Whereafter I send you praise of God, beside Whom there is no God. Thereafter: Pay attention to the condition of the Protected (non-Muslims), treat them tenderly. If any of them reaches old age and has no resources, it is you who should spend on him. If he has contractual brethren, demand these latter to spend on him. Apply retaliation if anybody commits tort against him. This is as if you have a slave, who reaches old age, you should spend on him tell his death or liberate him. I have learned that you accept tithe on the import of wine and make it enter the Treasury belonging to God. I warn you never to let it enter the Treasury belonging to God, however small the amount maybe, unless it be a legally pure property. Peace be with you."

436. Another letter of the same caliph (cf. Ibn Sa'd, V. 253) says :
" Purify the registers from the charge of obligation (i.e., taxes levied unjustly); and study old files (also). If any injustice has been committed regarding a Muslim or a non-Muslim, restore him his right. If any such person should have died, remit his rights to his heirs."
437. It is common knowledge that the Muslim jurists recognize the right of preemption in regard to neighbours. If anybody sells his immovable property, the neighbour has the prior right over a stranger. This right is recognized in favour of non-Muslims as well.

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

438. The safeguard of the rights of non-Muslims, in the Islamic territory, goes even to the extent of giving them the liberty of practising customs entirely opposed to those of Islam. For instance the consumption of alcoholic drinks is forbidden to Muslims, yet the non-Muslim inhabitants of the country have full liberty not only of consumption, but also of manufacture, importation and sale of the same. The same is true for games of chance, marriage with close relatives, the contract entailing interest, etc. In olden times, this did not affect Muslims, and abuses with their repercussions were rare. Modern jurists have restricted the liberty insofar as international commerce is concerned. As attempts to restrict alcoholic consumption will be ineffectual if they should not be applicable to the whole population, the consent of the representatives of non-Muslims has facilitated the task for jurists, who in principle would not intervene in the practices of different communities differing in points of religion.

439. The Islamic law makes a certain distinction among different non-Muslim communities, insofar as their relations with individual Muslims are concerned. It divides non-Muslims into what we might call "developed" and "primitive," or those who believe in the One God and follow Divine laws revealed to the founder of their religions, and those who do not do that (such idolators, atheists, pagans, animists, etc.). All are tolerated as subjects and enjoy protection with regard to the liberty of conscience and life, yet a Muslim in his private life treats them differently: a Muslim has the right to marry a "developed" non-Muslim woman, but not a " primitive" one. So is it too that a Muslim may not only marry a Christian or a Jewish girl, but also give her the liberty to conserve her religion. She may go to church or to synagogue, she may drink wine, etc. It is forbidden for a Muslim to marry a woman who does not believe in God or an idolatress or a polytheist. A Muslim woman cannot be the wife of non-Muslim to whatever category he may belong (Q. 60:10). Again, a Muslim cannot eat the flesh of animals slaughtered by members of the "primitive" communities.

Conversion

440. The Islamic law expressly recognizes for non-Muslims the liberty to preserve their beliefs; and while it forbids categorically all recourse to compulsion for converting others to Islam, it maintains rigorous discipline among its own adherents. The basis of the Islamic "nationality" is religious and not ethnic, linguistic nor regional. Hence apostasy has naturally been considered political treason. It is true that this crime is punished by penalties, but the necessity scarcely as history has proved. Not only at the time when the Muslims reigned supreme from the Pacific to the Atlantic Oceans, but even in our own age of political as well as material and intellectual weakness among Muslims, apostasy of Muslims is surprisingly non-existent. This is true not only of regions where there is the semblance of a Muslim State, but even elsewhere, under the colonial powers who have made all humanly possible efforts to convert Muslims to other religions. Islam is gaining ground today, even among Western peoples, from Finland to Norway to Italy, from Canada to Argentina. And all this in spite of the absence of any organized missionary activity.

Holy War

Mega Lecture

441. Let us conclude this brief expose with some words on a question which is most misunderstood in non-Muslim circles. It refers to the notion commonly held of the holy war. The entire life of a Muslim, be it concerning spiritual affairs or temporal ones, is a discipline regulated by Divine law. If a Muslim celebrates even his service of prayer without conviction (for ostentation, for instance), it is not a spiritual act of devotion, but a crime against God, a worship of the self punishable in the Hereafter. On the contrary, if a Muslim takes his meals for the purpose of having the needed strength to perform his obligations regarding God, even if he cohabits with his wife, as an act of obedience to the Divine law which orders him that, these acts of need and pleasure constitute saintly acts, acts of devotion, meriting all the Divine rewards promised for piety, as a saying of the Prophet indicates.

442. Such being the concept of life, a just struggle cannot be anything except a holy act. All war is forbidden in Islam, if it is not waged for a just cause, ordained by the Divine law. The life of the Prophet provides reference to only three kinds of wars: defensive, punitive and preventive. In a celebrated correspondence with the Emperor Heraclius of Byzantium, in connection with the assassination of a Muslim ambassador in the Byzantine territory, the Prophet proposed three alternatives: "Embrace Islam - if not, then pay the *jizyah* tribute. . . if not, then do not interfere between thy subjects and Islam if these former desire to embrace Islam or pay the *jizyah*" (cf. *Abu 'Ubaid, Kitab al-Amwal*, s. 5 5). To establish liberty of conscience in the world was the aim and object of the struggle of the Prophet Muhammad, and who may have a greater authority in Islam than he? This is the "holy war" of the Muslims, the one which is undertaken not for the purposes of exploitation, but in a spirit of sacrifice, its sole object being to make the Word of God prevail. All else is illegal. There is absolutely no question of waging war for compelling people to embrace Islam - that would be an unholy war.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Chapter No: 13

Muslim Contributions to Science and Art

Just as many are there sciences, so many do we require specialists from among the historians to describe adequately the Muslim contribution to each branch and to collaborate in the compilation of a general survey of this vast subject. Far from pretending to deal adequately with the topic, an attempt is made here to give information of a general nature relating to the role the Muslims have played in the development of the various arts and sciences.

General Attitude

444. Islam is a comprehensive concept of life and not merely a religion describing the relations between man and his Creator. Therefore it becomes necessary to, first of all, give an account of the attitude of Islam with respect to the pursuit of arts and sciences.

445. Far from discouraging a life of well-being in this world, the Qur'an gives expression again and again to directions like: "*Say (O Muhammad): Who hath forbidden the adornment (beautiful gifts) of God which He hath brought forth for His bondsmen and the good things of His providing?*" (7:32) It praises those "*who say: Our Lord! Give unto us in this world that which is best and in the Hereafter that which is best, and guard us from the torment of Fire*." (2:201) It teaches mankind: ". . . . *and neglect not thy portion of the world, and be thou kind even as God hath been kind to thee*. ." (28:77). It is this quest for well-being which attracts man to study and to learn, in as perfect a manner as possible, all that exists in the universe so as to profit by it and to be grateful to God for it. The Qur'an says: "*And We have given you (mankind) authority on the earth, and appointed for you therein a livelihood; small are the thanks ye give*:" (7:10; cf. 15: 20-21): And again: "*He it is Who created for you all that is in the earth*. . ." (2:29) further: "*See ye not how God hath made service able unto you whatsoever is in the skies and whatsoever is in the earth and hath loaded you with His favours both without and within*?" (31:20, cf. 14:32-33; 16:12, 33:65, 65:11-12, etc.). On one hand, the Qur'an reminds men of their duty of worshipping the One "*Who hath fed them against hunger, and hath made them safe from fear*" (106:4) and on the other hand, it tells them of the need for effort in this world of cause and effect: "*And man hath only that for which he maketh effort*." (53:39) The Qur'an (30:42) urges men not only to go on exploration: "*Say: Travel in the land and see the nature of the end of those who were before you," but also for new discoveries* ..." "... *who meditate over the creation of the heavens and the earth, (and say:) Our Lord! Thou createdst not this in vain.*" (3:191)

446. As to the method of increasing knowledge, it is inspiring to note that the very first revelation that came to the Prophet, who was born amongst illiterate people, was a command to read and write, and the praise of the pen which is the only means or custodian of human knowledge: "

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Read with the name of thy Lord, Who createth,
Createth man from a clot. Read, and thy Lord is the Most Bounteous,
Who teacheth by the pen:
Teacheth man that which he knew not." (Q. 96:1-5).

It also reminds us: ". . . *and ask the people of remembrance if ye know not*" (16:43, 21:7), as also: " . . . *and of knowledge ye have been vouchsafed but little*" (17:85). Further: " . . . *We raise by grades whom We will, and over every possessor of knowledge there is one more knowing*" (12:76). What abeautiful prayer is the one which the Qur'an teaches man: ".. *and say: my Lord! Increase me in knowledge*" (20:114).

447. Prophet Muhammad said: "**Islam is built on five fundamentals: Belief in God, Service of worship, Fasting, Pilgrimage of the House of the One God, and the *Zakat*-tax**." If belief demands the cultivation of the theological sciences, the other requires a study of the mundane sciences. For the service of worship, one faces towards Mecca, and the service must be celebrated on the occurrence of certain determined natural phenomena. This requires knowledge of the elements of geography and astronomy. Fasting also requires the understanding of natural phenomena, such as the appearance of the dawn, the setting of the sun, etc. The pilgrimage necessitates knowledge of the routes and the means of transport in order to proceed to Mecca. Payment of the *Zakat* requires knowledge of mathematics, which knowledge is also necessary for calculations for the distribution of the heritage of the deceased. Similarly there is the fundamental need of the understanding of the Qur'an in the light of historical facts and allusions and references to the sciences contained therein. In fact, the study of the Qur'an requires first of all a knowledge of the language in which it is compiled (the linguistic sciences) and its references to various peoples demand a knowledge of history and geography, and so on and so forth.

448. Let us recall that when the Prophet began an independent life, settling down in Madinah, his first act was the construction of a mosque with a portion reserved for the purpose of a school (the celebrated*Suffah*) which served during the day as a lecture hall, and during the night as a dormitory for students.

449. *God helps those who help the cause of God*, is repeated often in the Qur'an (47:7, 22:40). It is not surprising if Muslims had the good fortune to possess abundant and cheap paper so as to spread knowledge among the masses. Since the second century of the *Hijrah*, there began to be established factories for the manufacture of paper all over the vast Muslim empire.

450. For purposes of this short sketch, we shall refer only to a few sciences in which the contribution of the Muslims has been particularly important for mankind.

Religious and Philosophical Sciences

451. The religious sciences began, naturally enough, with the Qur'an which the Muslims received as the Word of God, the Divine Message addressed to man. Its perusal and understanding necessitated the study of the linguistic, grammatical, historical, and even the

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

speculative sciences, along with many others - which gradually developed into independent sciences of general utility. The recitation of the sacred text brought into being, and developed, the religious "music" of Islam (to which we shall revert later). The preservation of the Qur'an led to improvements in the Arabic script, not only from the point of view of precision, but also of beauty. With its punctuation and vocalization, the Arabic script is incontestably the most precise for the needs of any language in the world. The universal character of Islam necessitated the understanding of the Qur'an by non-Arabs; and we see a series of translations, from the very time of the Prophet (Salman al-Farsi had translated parts of it into Persian) continuing to our own day, and there is no end to it in sight. It is necessary to point out that these translations were made solely for the purpose of understanding the contents by those who did not know Arabic, yet never for liturgical purposes. For in the service of worship, one uses only the Arabic text. And the method adopted by order of the Prophet for the preservation of the integrity of the sacred text was perpetuated, namely recording by writing, and learning by heart, both done simultaneously. Each process was to help the other in guarding against forgetfulness or the commission of error. The institution of a judicial method of verification further perfected the system. Thus, one was required not only to procure a copy of the Qur'an, but also to read it from the beginning to the end before a recognized master, in order to obtain a certificate of authenticity. This practice continues to this day.

452. As in the case of the Qur'an, Muslims were also attached to the sayings of the Prophet. The reports of his sayings and doings, both public and private, were preserved. The preparation of such memoirs began even in the lifetime of the Prophet, on the private initiative of certain of his companions, and was continued after his death, by a process of collection of first hand knowledge. As was the case of the Qur'an, authenticity was insisted on in all transmissions. One could relate all that is known of the lives of Noah, Moses, Jesus, Buddha and other great men of antiquity, in a few pages only, but the known details of the biography of the Prophet Muhammad fills hundreds of pages, so great was the care that was taken to preserve for posterity documented and precise data.

453. The speculative aspect of the Faith, particularly in the matter of beliefs and dogmas, shows that the discussions which I began in the lifetime of the Prophet, became later the root cause of different sciences, such as the *Kalam* (dogmatico-scholastic), and *tasawwuf* (mystico-spiritualistic). The religious polemics with non-Muslims, and even among Muslims themselves, introduced foreign elements from Greek and Indian philosophy, etc. Later on, Muslims did not lack their own great philosophers endowed with originality and erudition, like al-Kindi, al-Farabi, Ibn-Sina (Avicenna), Ibn-Rushd (Averroes) and others. The Arabicization of foreign books resulted in the fortunate feature that scores of Greek and Sanskrit works, whose originals have now been lost, became preserved for posterity in their Arabic translations.

New Sciences

454. The part played by the Muslims in the development of the social sciences has been very important. A remarkable characteristic of Muslim science is the rapidity of its development. The Qur'an was the first book ever written in the Arabic language. Scarcely two hundred years later,

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

this language of the illiterate Bedouins developed into one of the richest in the world, later to become not only the richest of all languages of the time, but also an international language for all sorts of sciences. Without stopping to discover the cause of this phenomenon, let us recall another fact. The first Muslims were almost all Arabs, yet with the exception of their language, which was the repository of the Word of God and of His Prophet, they effaced their own personality, under the influence of Islam, in order to receive in Islam all races on the basis of absolute equality. Therefore it is that all races have participated in the progress of the "Islamic" sciences: Arabs, Iranians, Greeks, Turks, Abyssinians, Berbers, Indians, and others, who have embraced Islam. Their religious tolerance was so great, and the patronage of learning so perfect, that Christians, Jews, Magians, Buddhists and others collaborated with a view to enrich the Muslim sciences, not only in the domain of their respective religious literature, but also in other branches of learning. Arabic had spread more widely than any other language of the world, since it was the official language of the Muslim State whose territory extended from China to Spain.

Law

455. In its comprehensive character, legal science developed among Muslims very early. They were the first in the world to entertain the thought of an abstract science of law, distinct from the codes of the general laws of the country. The ancients had their laws, more or less developed and even codified, yet a science which should treat the philosophy and sources of law, and the method of legislation, interpretation, application, etc., of the law was wanting, and this never struck the minds of the jurists before Islam. Since the second century of the *Hijrah* (800 C.E.) there began to be produced Islamic works of this kind, called *Usul al-Fiqh*.

456. In the days of antiquity, International Law was neither international nor law. It formed a part of politics and depended on the discretion and mercy of statesmen. Moreover, its rules applied only to a limited number of States inhabited by peoples of the same race, who followed the same religion and spoke the same language. The Muslims were the first to accord it a place in the legal system, creating both rights and obligations. This may be observed in the rules of international law that formed part of a special chapter in the codes and treatises of the Muslim law ever since the earliest times. In fact the most ancient treatise which we possess is the *Majmu'* of Zaid ibn 'Ali, who died in 120 H/737 C.E. That work also contains the chapter in question. Further, the Muslims developed this branch of study as an independent science, and monographs on the subject, under the generic title of *Siyar*, were found existing even before the middle of the second century of the *Hijrah*. In his *Tawali at-Ta 'sis*, Ibn Hajar relates that the first monograph of the kind hailed from the pen of Abu Hanifah, the contemporary of the above-mentioned Zaid Ibn 'Ali. The characteristic feature of this international law is, that it makes no discrimination among foreigners. It does not concern inter-Muslim relations, but deals solely with the non-Muslim States of the entire world. Islam in principle forms one single unit and one single organic community.

457. Another contribution in the legal domain is the comparative Case Law. The appearance of different schools of the Muslim law necessitated this kind of study, in order to bring into relief the

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

reasons of their differences as well as the effects of each divergence of principle on a given point of law. The books of Dabusi and Ibn Rushd are classics on the subject. Saimuri wrote even a work of comparative jurisprudence or methodology of law (*Usul al-Fiqh*).

458. The written-constitution of the State is also an innovation of the Muslims. In fact, Prophet Muhammad was its author. When he established a City-State at Madinah, he endowed it with a written constitution, which document has come down to us, thanks to Ibn Hisham and Abu 'Ubaid, and its contents could be divided into 52 clauses. It mentions in precise terms the rights and obligations of the head of the State, of constituent units, and of subjects respectively, in matters of administration, legislation, justice, defence, etc. It dates from the year 622 of the Christian era.

459. In the field of law proper, codes have appeared since the beginning of the second century of the *Hijrah*. They are divided into three principal parts: (i) cult or religious practices, (ii) contractual relations of all kinds, and (iii) penalties. In keeping with its comprehensive view of life, there was no differentiation in Islam between the mosque and the citadel. The doctrine of the State or constitutional law formed a part of the cult, since the leader of the State was the same as the leader of the service of worship. The revenues and finances also formed part of the cult, since the Prophet had declared them to be one of the four fundamentals of Islam, side by side with worship, fasting, and pilgrimage. International law formed part of the penalties, war being placed on the same level as action against marauding brigands, pirates and other violators of law or treaty.

460. It is due to this comprehensive view of law among Muslims, that we have discussed the question at length.

History and Sociology

461. The share of Muslims in these is important from two points of view, one being assurance in the matter of authenticity and the other the collection and preservation of the most varied details. Born in the full light of history, Islam did not require legends and hearsay. With regard to data concerning other peoples, each narration was accorded the value it merited. But the current history of Islam required a fully reliable measure to maintain such an integrity through the ages. Attestation by witnesses was once an exclusive feature of judicial tribunals. The Muslims applied it to history; one required evidence for each reported narration. If, in the first generation after the event, it sufficed to have one trustworthy witness of the event, in the second generation it was necessary to cite two successive sources: "I have heard A, telling me that he had heard B, who had lived at the time of the event, giving the details". And in the third generation, three sources were required, and so on and so forth. These exhaustive references assured the truthfulness of the chain of the successive sources, for one could refer to biographical dictionaries which indicated not only the character of individual personages, but also the names of their teachers as well as of their principal pupils. This kind of evidence is available not merely in connection with the life of the Prophet, but even for all branches of

Mega Lecture

knowledge transmitted from one generation to another, sometimes even in the domain of anecdotes meant simply for amusement and pastime.

462. Biographical dictionaries are a characteristic feature of Muslim historical literature. The dictionaries were compiled according to professions, towns or regions, centuries or epochs, etc. Equally great importance was given to genealogical tables, particularly amongst the Arabs; and the relationship of hundreds of thousands of persons of some importance, thus learnt, facilitates the task of the researcher who should desire to penetrate the underlying causes of events.

463. As to history proper, the characteristic trait of the chronicles is their universalism. If the pre-Islamic peoples produced national histories, then Muslims seemed to be the first to write these world histories, Ibn Ishaq (d. 769) for instance, who is one of the earliest historians of Islam, not only begins his voluminous annals with an account of the creation of the universe and the history of Adam, but he also speaks of other races that he knew, of his time - a task which was pursued with ever-increasing passion by his successors at-Tabari, al- Mas'udi, Miskawaih, Saa'id al Andalusi, Rashiduddin Khan and others. It is interesting to observe that these historians, (to begin with at-Tabari) commenced their work with a discussion on the notion of time. Ibn Khaldun dove deeper into these sociological and philosophical discussions, in his celebrated *Prolegomena to Universal History*.

464. Already in the first century of the *Hijrah*, two branches of history began to develop independently, and were later combined with one composite whole. One was Islamic history, beginning with the life of the Prophet and continuing through the time of the caliphs, and the other non-Muslim history, whether concerning pre-Islamic Arabia or foreign countries such as Iran, Byzantium, etc. A very clear instance is that of the history of Rashiduddin Khan, the major portion of which still remains to be printed. This was simultaneously prepared both in Arabic and Persian versions, and speaks with equal familiarity of the prophets, caliphs, and popes as well as the kings of Rome, China, India, Mongolia, etc.

Geography and Topography

465. Pilgrimage as well as commerce in the vast Muslim empire needed communication. Baladhuri and Ibn al-Jauzi report: "Every time the post departed for some destination or other (ranging from Turkestan to Egypt, and this happened almost daily) the Caliph 'Umar used to have it announced in the metropolis so that private letters could also be despatched in time through the official courier." The Directors of the Post prepared route-guides, whose publication was always accompanied by more or less detailed historico-economic description of each place, place-names being often arranged alphabetically. This literary geography led to other scientific studies. The geography of Ptolemy was translated into Arabic, and so were the Sanskrit works of Indian authors. Tales of travels and voyages increased daily the knowledge of the common man. The very diversity of the data counteracted all possibility of Chauvinism and one was obliged to put everything to practical test and trial. The dialogue of Abu-Hanifah (d. 767) reported by al-Muwaffaq, (1, 161) is well known: A Mu'tazilite asked him where the centre of the earth was, and he replied: "In the very place where thou art sitting!" This reply can be given only

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

if one meant to convey that the earth was spherical. Even the earliest world maps, prepared by Muslims, represent the earth in circular shape. Ibn Hauqual's (cir. 975) cartography, for instance, presents no difficulty at all in recognizing the Mediterranean or the Near-Eastern countries. The map of al-Idrisi, prepared for King Roger of Sicily, (1101-54), astonishes us by its great precision and exactitude; it marks even the sources of the Nile. One has to remember that the Arabo-Muslim maps point upwards to the South, the North downwards. The maritime voyages necessitated the tables of Latitude and Longitude as well as the use of the astrolabe and other nautical instruments. Thousands of Muslim coins, discovered in the excavations of Scandinavia, Finland, Russia, Kazan, etc., show conclusively the commercial activity of Muslim caravan-leaders during the Middle Ages. Ibn Majid, who served as pilot to Vasco da Gama as far as India, already speaks of the compass as a familiar thing. Muslim mariners astonished us with their skill and daring in their voyage from Basrah (Iraq) to China. The words *arsenal, admiral, cable, monsoon, douane, tariff,* which are all of Arabic origin, are substantial proof of the Muslim influence on modern Western culture.

Astronomy

466. The discovery and study of a number of stars is acknowledged to be a valuable and unforgettable contribution of the Muslims. A very large number of stars are still known in Western languages by their Arabic names, and it is Ibn-Rushd (Averroes) who recognized spots on the surface of the sun. The calendar reform by 'Umar al-Khayyam outdistances by far the Gregorian one. The pre-Islamic Bedouin Arabs had already developed very precise astronomical observations, not only for their nocturnal travel in the desert, but also for meteorology, rain, etc. A number of books called *Kitab al-Anwa*, gives us sufficient proof of the extent of Arabic knowledge. Later, Sanskrit, Greek and other works were translated into Arabic. The confrontation of their divergent data required new experiments and patient observation. Observatories surfaced everywhere. Under the Caliph al-Ma'mun, the circumference of the earth was measured, the exactness of these results was astonishing. Works were compiled very early dealing with the ebb and flow of the tide, dawn, twilight, rainbows, halos, and above all the sun and the moon and their movements, since they are immediately related with the question of the hours of prayer and fasting.

Natural Science

467. The characteristic feature of this aspect of Islamic science is the emphasis laid on experiment and observation without prejudice. The Arabian method was quite unique and wonderful. The authors began their study of the sciences by the preparation of categorized dictionaries of technical terms, which were found in their own language. With extraordinary patience, they painstakingly scrutinized all books of prose and poetry, in order to sorting out terms -with useful citations - in each branch separately, such as anatomy, zoology, botony, astronomy, mineralogy, etc. Each successive generation revised the works of its predecessors so as to add something new thereto. These simple lists of words, with some literary or anecdotic observations, proved of immense value when the work of translation began. Rare were the cases in which one required to Arabicize, or conserve a foreign word in Arabicized form.

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

468. Words used in Botany are quite characteristic. Except for the names of certain plants which did not grow in the Muslim empire, there is not a single technical term of foreign origin therein; one found words for every term in Arabic. The *Kitab an-Nabat*, Encyclopaedia Botanica of ad-Dinawari (d. 895) in six thick volumes was compiled even before the first translation into Arabic of the works on the subject in Greek. In the words of Silverberg: After a thousand years of study, Greek botany resumed with the works of Dioscorides and Theophrastus, but the very first Muslim work, of ad-Dinawari, on the subject far surpasses them in erudition and extensiveness.[(1)] Ad-Dinawari describes not only the exterior of each plant, but also their alimentary, medicinal and other properties. He classified them, spoke of their habitat, among other details.

Medical Science

469. Medicine also made extraordinary progress under the Muslims, in the branches of anatomy, pharmacology, organization of hospitals, and training of doctors, who were subjected to an examination before being authorized to start practice. Having common frontiers with Byzantium, India, China, etc., Muslim medical arts and science became a synthesis of the world medical knowledge. And if the old lore was subjected to trial and test, new original contributions were also made. The works of Razi (Rhazes), Ibn-Sina (Avicenna) Abu'l-Qasim (Abucasis) and others remained until recent times the basis of all medical study even in the West. We know now that the fact of the circulation of blood was also known to them, thanks to the writings of Ibn an-Nafis.

Optics

470. This science owes a particular debt to the Muslims. We possess the book of rays by al-Kindi (of the 9th century), which was already far in advance of the Greek lore of the incendiary mirrors. Ibn al-Haitham (Alhazen, 965), who followed him, has rightly merited a lasting celebrity. Al-Kindi, al-Farabi, Ibn-Sina, al-Birun and others who were representatives of Muslim science, yield their place to none in the world history of science.

Mineralogy, Mechanics, etc.

471. This attracted the attention of the learned, both from the medical point of view and for the purpose of distinguishing precious stones, so much sought after by kings and other wealthy people. The works of al-Biruni are still functional in this field.

472. Ibn-Firnas (d.888) had invented an apparatus, with which he flew a long distance. He died in an accident, and left no successor to pursue and perfect his work. Others invented mechanical instruments for floating sunken ships, or pulling out trees without difficulty that are of an enormous dimension.

473. For the underwater lore, numerous treatises were written on pearl-fishery and the treatment of their shells.

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Zoology

474. The observation of the life of the wild animals and birds had always fascinated the Bedouins of Arabia. Al-Jahiz (d. 868) has left a huge work for popularizing the subject while referring to evolution, which theme was later developed by Miskawaih, al- Qazwini, ad-Damiri, and others, not to speak of numerous works on falconery and hunting by means of domesticated and trained beasts and birds of prey.

Chemistry and Physics

475. The Qur'an has repeatedly urged Muslims to meditate over the creation of the universe, and to study how the heavens and earth have been made subservient to man. Therefore there has never been a conflict between faith and reason in Islam. Thus it is that the Muslims began very early an ever-progressive and serious study of chemistry and physics. Scientific works are attributed to Khalid ibn Yazid (d. 704) and to the great jurist Ja'far as Sadiq (d. 765); and their pupil Jabir ibn Hayyan (cir. 776) has justly remained celebrated throughout the ages. The characteristic feature of their works has been objective experimentation, instead of simple specualtion; and it was through observation that they accumulated facts. Under their influence, ancient alchemy was transformed into an exact science, based on facts and practical demonstration. Already Jabir knew the chemical operations of calcination and reduction and he also developed the methods of evaporation, sublimation, crystallization, etc. It is evident that in such paths of human knowledge, patient work for generations and centuries was required. The existence of Latin translations of the works of Jabir and others (for a long time were used as textbooks in Europe) suffices to show how greatly modern science is indebted to the works of the Muslim savants, and how fast it developed, thanks to the applications of the Arabo-Muslim method of experimentation rather than the Greek method of speculation.

Mathematics

476. Mathematical science had left ineffaceable traces of the Muslim share in its development. The terms *algebra, zero, cipher*, etc., are of Arabic origin. The names of al-Khwarizmi, 'Umar al-Khayyam, al-Biruni and others shall remain as famous as those of Euclid and the Indian author of Siddhanta, etc. Trigonometry was unknown to the Greeks - the credit for its discovery undoubtedly goes to Muslim mathematicians.

Summary

477. Muslims continued their work in the service of science until great misfortunes afflicted their principal intellectual centres, Baghdad in the East, and Cordova-Granada in the West. These were occupied by barbarians, to the great misfortune of science, at a time when the printing press had not yet come into vogue. The burning of libraries with their hundreds of thousands of MSS led to untold and irreparable loss. And the wholesale massacres did not spare the learned. What had been constructed over the course of centuries was destroyed within days. Once a civilization declines, owing to such calamities, it takes several centuries as well as numerous

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

resources, including the facilities to study the achievements of others - who should have taken the relay after the fall of the previous standard-bearers of civilization - before one can make up the distance. Moreover noble characters and great minds cannot be had at will - they are the gift and grace of the Almighty on a people. That men of noble character are held in check, and not invested with the direction of their countrymen, which is assumed by incompetent and unscrupulous persons, is another tragedy which one has often to deplore.

Arts

478. As in the case of the sciences, the Qur'an took the initiative in the development of art among Muslims. The liturgical recitation of the Holy Qur'an created a new branch of music (cf infra 485). The conservation of its text necessitated calligraphy and book-binding. The construction of mosques developed architecture and decorative art. To these were added later the secular needs of the wealthy. In its care for an equilibrium between body and the soul, Islam taught moderation in all things, led the natural talents in the right direction, and tried to develop in man a harmonious whole.

479. We read, in the Sahih of Muslim, and the Musnad of Ibn Hanbal, an interesting saying of the Prophet: "**God is beautiful and likes beauty.**" Another of his sayings is: "**Beauty is prescribed in everything; even if you kill somebody, kill him in a nice manner**." God has spoken in the Qur'an: "*We have beautified the lower sky with lamps*" (67:5), or "*Lo! We have placed all that is on the earth as an ornamental thing that We may try men: which of them is best in conduct.*" (18:7) It goes so far as to ordain: "*Put on your dress of adornment on every occasion of prostration (service of prayer).*" (7:31)

480. In the life of the Prophet, we come across the following instructive incident: One day he saw the interior of a grave which was not fully levelled. He ordered the defect to be mended, adding that it would do neither good nor harm to the dead, but it was more pleasant to the eye of the living, and whenever one does something, God likes that one does it in a perfect manner. (cf. Ibn; Sa'd, VIII, 156)

481. The taste for fine art is innate in man. As in the case of all other natural gifts, Islam seeks to develop the artistic talents with the spirit of moderation. It may be recalled that excess even af self-mortification and of spiritual practices is forbidden in Islam.

482. The first *minbar* (pulpit) in the mosque, which was prepared for the Prophet, was decorated with two balls, like pomegranates, and the two little grandchildren of the Prophet enjoyed playing with them. This was the beginning of wood-carving. Later on, copies of the Qur'an were illuminated in colour, and the greatest care was taken in their binding. In short, Islam never forbade artistic progress. The only restriction is the one against the representation of animal (including human) figures. The prohibition does not seem to be absolute, and we shall revert to it, yet the Prophet has placed a restraint on this activity. The reasons for this are metaphysical as well as psychological, biological and social. In the creation of the different kingdoms, animal life is the highest manifestation, vegetables and minerals succeed it in a lower order. Therefore

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

in his anxiety to pay his profound respect to the Creator, man reserves for God the privilege of the supreme creation, and contents himself with the representation of inferior objects. The psychologists point out that, seeing the privileged position which the animal kingdom occupies in creation (with the faculty of movement and, for man in particular, the faculty of invention), animal representation gives man the double temptation to which he cannot always resist: the temptation to believe that he "creates," whereas he merely manufactures, (and as a proof the famous story of a Greek sculptor who had become amourous of his own sculpture), and the temptation to attribute to the representation the soul and the ideal virtues of an accessible Divinity (cf. the history of human antiquity of idolatory, and the modern taste for the cult of heroes, champions and stars). The biological aspect is that an unutilized talent reinforces those in constant use. Thus, a blind man possesses a memory and a sensibility which are far superior to those of ordinary men. By abstaining from animal representations in painting, engraving, sculpture, etc., the innate talent of the artist seeks other outlets and manifests itself with greater vigour in other domains of art, (cf. the pruning down of the superfluous branches of a tree in order to increase its fruits). As regards the social aspect, the horror of Chauvinism, which degenerates into idolatry, and a restraint on animal representation would lead to restraint on idolatry. There are however several exceptions: such as toys of children, decoration of cushions and carpets - both these were expressly tolerated by the Prophet - scientific needs (for teaching anatomy, anthropology, etc.), security needs (of the police, etc., for identification, for search of the absconding criminal), and others of like import, cannot be banned.

483. History has shown that this check on "figurative" art among Muslims has never curbed art in general; on the contrary an astonishing development was achieved in the non-figurative spheres. The Qur'an itself (24:36) recommended grandeur in the construction of mosques. The Prophet's Mosque at Madinah, the Dome of the Rock at Jerusalem, the Sulaimaniyeh Mosque in Istanbul, the Taj- Mahal in Agra (India), the Alhambra Palace at Granada, and other monuments are in no way inferior to the masterpieces of other civilizations, either in architecture or in artistic decoration.

484. Calligraphy as an art is a Muslim speciality. It makes writing a piece of art, in place of pictures; it is employed in painting or mural sculpture, to decorate fine cloth, and other material, excellent specimen of this art, with their powerful way of execution, grace and beauty, are things to see, and impossible to describe.

485. Another art which is peculiar to the Muslims is the recitation of the Qur'an. Not accompanied by instruments of music, and not being even in verse, the Qur'an has been an object of great attention for recitation purposes, since the time of the Prophet. The Arabic language lends to its prose a sweetness and melody hardly to be surpassed by the rhymed verses of other languages. Those who have listened to the master singer, or *Qari*, reciting the Qur'an or pronouncing several times a day the calls to the prayer, know that these specialities of the Muslims have unequalled charms of their own.

486. Even mundane music and song, under the patronage of kings and other wealthy people, have had their development among Muslims. Theoreticians like al-Farabi, the authors of

Mega Lecture

the *Rasa'il Ikhwan as-Safa*, Avicenna and others have not only left monumental works on the subject, but have even made appreciable corrections in Greek and Indian music. They have employed signs to denote music, and have described different musical instruments. The choice of appropriate melody for different poems and selection of instrument according to the requirements of the occasion - of joy and of sadness, in the presence of sick men, etc. - have been objects of profound study.

487. As for poetry, the Prophet recognizes: "**There are verses of poems which are full of wisdom, and there are discourses of orators which produce a magical effect**." The Qur'an has discouraged immoral poetry. Following this direction, the Prophet surrounded himself by the best poets of the epoch, and showed them the road to follow and the limits to observe, thus distinguishing between the good and the bad use of this great natural talent. The poetic works of Muslims are found in all languages and relate to all times and it would be impossible to describe them here even in the briefest manner. An Arab, even a Bedouin, finds himself always "at home" in his poetry, as if borne out by synonymous terms: *Bait* means both a tent and a verse of two hemistiches. *Misra* means not only the flap of a tent, but also a hemistich. *Sabab* is rope of the tent as well as the prosodical foot. *Watad*: means a tent peg as well as the syllables of the prosodical foot. Further the names given to the different metres of poems are synonymous with different paces - fast, slow, etc. - of the camel. These are but a few among great many peculiarities of the language.

488. In short in the realm of art, Muslims have made worthy contributions, avoiding its harmful features, developing its aesthetic aspects, and inventing things quite new to it. In this sphere also, their share in development has been considerable. In passing, remarks may be made on two points:

(1) Had the Muslims no culture of theirs - the all-pervading Islamic culture with which the Prophet had inculcated them intensely - they would certainly have been absorbed by the culture of those whom these Muslims had so easily and so swiftly subjugated.

(2) Among the subjects of the extremely extensive Islamic State, there were peoples of all religions: Christians, Jews, Zoroastrians, Sabians, Brahmans, Buddhists among others, each with its own cultural tradition, even if these did not collaborate with each other, all of them did collaborate with the Muslims, who were their political masters, and each explained its own point of view to the Muslims who were thus obliged not to imitate any of them - since there was even contradictions in the different scientific strains - but to test them all and create a sort of synthesis, to the benefit of science and humanity.

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Chapter No: 14

The General History of Islam

THE history of Islam means practically the history of the world during the last fourteen centuries. What we can attempt here is just a modest sketch in broad lines of the chief events of this history.

Orthodox Caliphs

490. In the year 632 (11 H.) Prophet Muhammad breathed his last. During the twenty-three preceding years, he had toiled successfully for the formulation of a religion as well as the creation from nothingness of a State, which beginning as a tiny city-state in a part of the town of Madinah embraced in the short span of ten years the administration of the whole of the Arabian Peninsula together with certain southern parts of Palestine and Iraq. Further, he left a community composed of several hundreds of thousands of adherents, with the fullest faith and conviction in his doctrines and capable of continuing the work he had begun.

491. The temporal success of the Prophet of Islam prompted certain adventurers, during the latter part of his life, to advance pretensions to prophethood. For several months, after the death of the Prophet Muhammad, the task of his successor, Abu-Bakr, consisted in suppressing these impostors, who had been joined by a few others, emboldened by the death of the Prophet.

492. At the moment of the Prophet's demise, there was a state of war with Byzantium, and almost the same with Iran. It will be recalled that a Muslim ambassador had been assassinated in Byzantine territory (cf. supra 442); and instead of making amends, the emperor had not only rejected all the alternatives proposed by the Prophet, but had even intervened militarily to protect the murderer against the punitive expedition of the Muslims. As regards Iran, for several years there had been bloody skirmishes between that country and its protectorates in Arabia. Certain tribes inhabiting these regions had embraced Islam. The acts of aggression and repression on the part of the Iranians could no more be passed over without provoking complications on an international scale. It may be recalled that the Byzantine and Sassanid empires constituted, at the time, the two Big Powers of the world; whereas the Arabs possessed nothing enviable, being but a handful of nomads with neither military equipment nor material resources!

493. With a courage and boldness of spirit which can never be too greatly admired, the Caliph Abu-Bakr undertook a war against both these Big Powers simultaneously. In the first encounter, the Muslims occupied certain regions of the frontier. Then the Caliph sent an emissary to Constantinople in order to seek out a pacific solution, but all in vain. The defeat of the commandant at Caesaria, however, alarmed the emperor and he raised new troops. Abu-Bakr judged it necessary to transfer certain elements of the Muslim army from Iraq (Iranian empire) to Syria. In 634 a new victory was obtained at Ajnadain (near Jerusalem) followed a little later by

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

another at Fihl (Pella); as a result of which Palestine was definitely lost to Byzantium. The old Caliph Abu-Bakr died at this time, and his successor, 'Umar, had no alternative but to continue the task which he had inherited. Very soon Damascus, and later Emesa (Hims) in North Syria opened their gates to Muslims. Facts show that the people of these regions received the Muslims not as conquerors and enemies, but as liberators. After the capture of Emesa, the concentrated final efforts of Emperor Heraclius obliged the Muslims to evacuate the town along with certain other regions, for the purpose of a better regrouping and organization. When the evacuation was decided upon, the Muslim commandant ordered that all the taxes collected from the people of the place, (all non-Muslims) should be returned to them, since the right to utilize levies did not hold good when protection could no more be extended to the subjects. It is not surprising therefore that the vanquished shed tears on seeing their erstwhile conquerors obliged to retire. In his *Memoire sur la conquete de la Syrie*, De Goeje writes: "In fact the disposition of the men in Syria was very favourable to Arabs, and they merited it, since the leniency with which they treated the vanquished contrasted strongly with the dire tyranny inflicted by the preceding (Byzantine) masters." Shortly after their tactical retreat, the Muslims returned again with added strength and popularity.

494. The fate of Iran was not very different. The first incursions led to the occupation of Hirah (modern Kufah), and some other fortified localities. The departure of some detachments to Syria created a momentary calm, but a few months later the struggle recommenced, and the capital Mada'in (Ctesiphon) was occupied with ease. Emperor Yazdgird appealed for aid to the Emperor of China, the King of Turkestan and other neighbouring princes, but the help he received did not serve his ends, and his allies also suffered great losses.

495. During the time of 'Umar (634-44), the Muslims ruled from Tripoli (Lybia) to Baikh (Afghanistan), and from Armenia to Sindh (Pakistan) and Gujarat (India), and over the countries lying in between such as Syria, Iraq, and Iran, etc. Under his successor 'Uthman (644-56), they became masters of Nubia down to the outskirts of Dongola; they also occupied part of Andalusia (Spain); in the East, they crossed the river Oxus (Jaihun) and seized some regions from the Chinese. The islands of Cyprus, Rhodes and Crete became parts of the land of Islam. And in the course of defensive wars against the Byzantines, even Constantinople experienced a first Arab attack. Hardly fifteen years had passed after the death of the Prophet, when the East-West Muslim expansion spread from the Atlantic to the approaches of the Pacific, and an area was occupied that was as large as the whole continent of Europe. In this lightning conquest, what is surprising is that nowhere were the conquered discontented. This is proved also by the fact that in 656, when the Muslims were torn by their first civil war, no internal uprisings took place; and the Byzantine Emperor could not count in the least on his former subjects, but had to content himself with a small sum promised him by the cautious Muslim governor of Syria in exchange for the Emperor's neutrality.

496. It would be wrong to attribute this rapid expansion to any single cause. The weakness of the Byzantine and Sassanid empires as a result of their mutual conflicts, was offset by the lack of Arab conquerors in the matter of equipment, organization and other material resources. The Muslims could not spread en masse from China to Spain, and there were not enough Arabs to

Mega Lecture

be distributed over all this immense territory. We have seen that the beginning of these wars was rather political. There was absolutely no desire on the part of the Muslims to impose religion by force, their religion having formally prohibited such a thought. History also shows that at this time no compulsion was employed to convert the subjugated peoples. The simplicity and reasonableness of their religious doctrines together with the practical example in life which these Muslims set, no doubt attracted proselytes. Plunder and economic gain could form even poorer motives to explain the rapidity of the conquests. On the other hand, the change of masters was hailed by the vanquished as a change for the better. Contemporary administrative documents on papyrus, discovered recently in Egypt, attest to the fact that the Arabs had lightened the burden of taxes in Egypt. Therefore it seems certain that the same reforms were introduced everywhere in the conquered countries. The cost of administration was also much reduced, an effect not only due to the frugality of simple Arab life, but also due to the honesty of Muslim administrators. In Islam, the booty of war does not belong to the soldiers seizing it, but to the government, and it is this latter which distributes it among the members of the expedition in proportions fixed by law. Caliph 'Umar was often delightfully surprised at the honesty of the private soldiers and officers, who handed over even precious stones and other valuable objects which could have been easily concealed.

497. We may conclude this section by a contemporary Christian document. It refers to the letter of a Nestorian bishop, addressed to a friend of his, which has been preserved (cf. Assemani, Bibl. Orient, III, 2, p. XCVI): "These Tayites (Arabs), to whom God has accorded domination in our days, have also become our masters; yet they do not combat at all the Christian religion: on the contrary, they even protect our faith, respect our priests and our saints, and make donations to our churches and our convents."

The Umayyads

498. At the death of the third Caliph, 'Uthman in 656, the Muslim world faced a war of succession, which was renewed several times during the subsequent twenty years in the course of which as many as half a dozen sovereigns appeared on the scene and then vanished. With the accession to power of 'Abd al-Malik (685-705), the government was again stabilized, and a new wave of conquests began. Morocco and Spain on the one hand, and North of the Indo-Pakistani continent as well as Transoxiana on the other were added to the domain of the Muslims. We see Bordeaux, Narbonne and Toulouse (in France) also passing into their hands. The metropolis moved from Madinah to Damascus. When the blessed city of the Prophet yielded place to what was formerly a Byzantine locality, religious devotion was also weakened in favour of secular activities. Luxury and the squandering of wealth, favouritism and the consequent revolts and upheavals were not lacking. Conquests, however, grew in both intellectual and social fields. Industry received a great impetus and medicine was particularly patronized by the government, which undertook the translation of foreign medical works, from Greek and other languages, into Arabic. The short reign of 'Umar ibn 'Ab al-'Aziz (817-20) was particularly brilliant and epoch-making. Monogamous himself, he by his piety brought a renewal of the period of Abu-Bakr and 'Umar. He revised the old files of confiscations, in order to return property to its rightful owners or to their heirs. He abolished many unjustifiable taxes. He was

Mega Lecture

rigid and unflinching for an impartial justice even when the oppressor was a Muslim and the victim a non-Muslim. He went so far as to order the evacuation of towns (Samarkand, for instance) which were treacherously occupied by Muslim armies. And he had not hesitated (cf. supra 434) to order demolition of part of the grand mosque of the capital, built on a usurped piece of land. The result was astonishing. At the start of this dynasty, the revenues of Iraq. for instance, amounted to hundreds of million dirhams, they fell to 18 million under the Caliph preceding 'Umar ibn 'Abd al-'Aziz. But under him they climbed to as much as 120 million. His religious devotion produced a world-wide impression of good and the rajas of Sindh, Turkestan and Berbery-Land embraced Islam. Everyone began to take an interest in religious studies, and a whole galaxy of savants surged forth to set up peaks in the fields of science in the Muslim community. The rigorous suppression of corruption further popularised the administration everywhere.

499. From among the architectural monuments of this time, there is still the Dome of the Rock, at Jerusalem, constructed in 691 C.E. The ruins or remains of other monuments at Damascus and elsewhere bear witness to the equally precocious progress of Muslims in this field. Great development of music is also noted, although musical notation was not yet invented, and we are unable to have a definite idea of the progress affected. The two great sects among Muslims, the Sunnite and Shi'ite date from the same period. The difference between these two sects is based on a political question whether the succession to the Prophet should take place by election or by inheritance among the close relatives of the Prophet. This became a question of dogma to the Shi'ites, and the schism split into ramifications of its own, and occasioned civil wars. It is one such uprising which swept away the Umayyad dynasty, and made it yield its place in 750 to the 'Abbasids, but the Shi'ites did not profit by the change. In our days, there are probably ten per cent Shi'ites among the Muslims of the world, the rest being almost all Sunnites, not to speak of the infinitesimally small sect of the Kharijites, which also came into existence at the same time.

The 'Abbasids

500. The rise into power of the 'Abbasids in 750 coincides with the division of the Muslim territory first into two, and later into ever increasing independent States. At Cordova (Spain), a rival caliphate was established, which never reconciled itself, till its downfall in 1492, to union with the East, where Baghdad had taken the place of Damascus as the seat of the caliphate.

501. The history of the 'Abbasids does not show any big military conquests, if we except the initiatives taken by regional chieftains, who though they recognized the caliph of Baghdad as their sovereign, did not depend on him in the least, in matters either of foreign policy or internal administration. We shall speak of the Indian sub-continent in this connection under a separate paragraph. The relations with Byzantium became more and more bitter and bloody, and the Greek empire had to leave Asia Minor definitely and be content for some time longer with its European possessions only.

502. The 'Abbasids inaugurated the policy of replacing popular armies of volunteers by standing armies of professionals recruited more and more from soldiers of Turkish origin, and this gave

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Mega Lecture

birth to feudalism and culminated later in the establishment of independent provinces, where one sees "dynasties" of governors. About a century after their assuming power, the 'Abbasid caliphs began to delegate (and even lose) their sovereign prerogatives in favour of centrifugal governors. And gradually their sovereignty was limited to their own palace, the rest being controlled by emirs, of whom the most powerful occupied even the metropolis. We see therein a 'strange contrast with the Papacy - The popes began without any political power, but later acquired it after some centuries, particularly with the creation of the Roman Empire. For some time they became even more powerful than emperors, only to lose this authority in the course of time. The Caliphs began as all- powerful rulers, shared the power later with the Sultans, and finally became figure-heads and nominal sovereigns with no influence to exert.

503. It was under the 'Abbasids that the governor of Tunis of the Aghlabid dynasty was invited to intervene in the civil wars of Sicily. He occupied the island, and also much of the mainland of Italy itself advancing as far as the walls of Rome. The South of France was annexed as also a considerable part of Switzerland. This wave of expansion was the work of the Aghlabids, who were later replaced, by force evidently, by the Fatimids. These latter, of the Shi'ite sect, transferred their capital to Cairo, where they established a rival caliphate. Enlightened rulers in general, one of them however profaned, in a moment of folly, the sacred shrines of the Christians at Jerusalem. This produced such a great resentment in Europe, that even the Popes preached a holy war against Islam. A series of crusades ensued, which bled both the Orient and Occident for two hundred years. At the time of the first crusade, the Fatimids had already abandoned Palestine, and it was the innocent civil population that fell victim to the fury of the invaders. Even more pathetic is the fact, that sometimes these Fatimids collaborated with the crusaders in their war against the Islamic Levant. There was no central authority in the Islamic world at that time, but dozens of petty States - anachronic City-States even-warring with each other. Of these rulers, the Kurds and Turks replaced more and more the Arabs in the struggle against the Occident. Salahuddin (Saladin), a Muslim hero of the time of the second crusade, not only expelled the Europeans from Syria-Palestine, but swept away the Fatimids of Egypt. Salahuddin and his successors recognized the caliphate of Baghdad, yet this latter never succeeded in recuperating its political power which remained divided among a host of fragmentary states. Some of these succeeded in extending the frontiers of the land of Islam.

504. In 921, the king of "Bulgar" (i.e., the region of Kazan, on the river Volga, in Russia) solicited a Muslim missionary from Baghdad. Ibn Fadlan was sent. According to the report of his travels, which is extremely interesting, the king of Bulgar embraced Islam, and created, so to say, an Islamic island in the midst of the non-Muslim regions. The Islamisation of Caucasus and the neighbouring regions continued slowly.

India

505. The Ghaznavid dynasty of Afghanistan began the reconquest (cf. 495) of India. Other dynasties followed, which contented themselves with only the North of the country. Then came the Khaijids who pushed their conquests towards the South. A negro commander, Malik Kafur, in a lightning expedition proceeded as far as Cape Comorin, yet it is only later that Southern

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

India saw the establishment of Muslim States in the region. The Great Mughals (1526-1858) are particularly celebrated in the Muslim history of India. For a long time, they ruled over almost the whole of this vast continent, and were considered among the "Bigs" of the world. Their central authority began to be weakened however by the action of provincial governors from the 18th century onwards. It was only in 1858 that the British chased them out and annexed three-fifths of the country for the Crown, the rest being divided among indigenous states, some of which were Muslim. These latter preserved the Indo-Muslim culture until our own time. One of these, Hyderabad, situated in the centre of India was as big as Italy, with over 20 million inhabitants. It was well known for the attention it gave particularly to the reform of Islamic education. In its university founded on Western lines with about a dozen faculties, there was also a faculty of Islamic theology. The university imparted teaching, at every level and in every faculty, through the medium of Urdu, the local language (with its script in Arabic characters). Specialization began in the school stage, when Arabic language, Fiqh, (Muslim law), and *Hadith* (documents on the life and sayings of the Prophet), were obligatory beside other subjects such as English language, mathematics and other courses of modern education. In the university stage, the students of the Faculty of Theology learned not only English of a high standard, but also Arabic and subjects concerned purely with Islamic studies were prescribed. Moreover comparative studies became the vogue. With the *Fiqh*was modern jurisprudence; with *Kalam*, the history of Western philosophy; with Arabic, also Hebrew or some modern European language, French or German in particular. When the students prepared their theses, they were attached to two guides - one a professor of the Faculty of Theology, and the other a professor from the Faculty of Arts and Letters or Law as the case may be. This provided the means of mastering simultaneously both the Islamic facts and modern Western trends on the same subject. After thirty years of experimentation and obtaining very happy results, there remains nothing now but a distant memory of it all. For, when the British left the country for good in 1947, dividing the country between Muslim Pakistan and non-Muslim Bharat, this latter not only incorporated its neighbouring indigenous States but even disintegrated and dissolved them in other administrative combination, creating linguistic "Nationalities" fraught with disintegration.

506. To revert to our main subject. As a passive spectator, the Caliphs of Baghdad continued to witness the constant changes in the "provinces," where *coups-d'état* replaced governors, divided single provinces into two or more units, reunited different provinces under the same hands, and soon. Yet cases were rare when the land of Islam was occupied by non-Muslims. The Seljuk Muslims deserve special mention. With their rise to power in the 11th century, they subjugated early not only Central Asia, but extended their conquests even as far as the farthest ends of Asia Minor, with Konia (Iconium) as their capital. After some generations of brilliant rule, they yielded place to what we call the Ottoman Turks. It is these latter who crossed the Bosphorus and extended the Islamic dominion to the walls of Vienna. Their capital was first at Brusa (Bursa), then Constantinople (Byzantium, now Istanbul), and is at present Ankara (Angora, Ancyre). Their recoil began in the 18th century, with their evacuating region after region of the European soil, and reached its climax in 1919, when they lost everything in the first World War. Some happy incidents of an international character helped Turkey to rise again in the form of a republic, which was at the outset ferociously nationalist and secular, but being democratic by nature, its regime had to conform more and more to the religious sentiments of

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Mega Lecture

the public which are profoundly Muslim. In the 16th century, the Ottoman Turks ruled in Europe as far as Austria, in North Africa as far as Algeria and Chad, and in Asia from Georgia to Yemen passing in between through Mesopotamia, Arabia and Asia Minor. Some of their former Muslim possessions are now independent States, but others have passed under the Soviet domination, not to speak of regions with a non-Muslim majority which have detached themselves from Turkey.

507. In the 13th century, some of the Tartars had not yet embraced Islam. Hulagu led them, massacred hundreds of thousands en route, and destroyed Baghdad, the seat of the caliphate in 1258. However, his army was annihilated in Palestine at the hands of Baybars, Muslim general of Egypt. Hulagu tried to lead another invasion, and invited even the crusaders to an offensive alliance, but without success. This marks the decline of Muslim science and the dawn of the Occidental science. (Today in the 20th century, Muslims are still far from equalling some of the Americans and Europeans in this field.) It might be noted that the efforts of Muslim mystics rallied these barbarian Tartars. And having embraced Islam, they not only took up the cause of Islam, but also immigrated to different countries of Europe and colonized them. There are living traces of them in the Muslim communities of Finland, Lithuania, Poland and USSR.

Andalusian Caliphate

508. As we have mentioned above, it is at the rise into caliphal power of the 'Abbasids that Spain detached itself from the Muslim Orient. After almost a thousand years of domination, in 1492, the last traces of a Muslim State were submerged there by the Castillian Christians. The Muslim period was a period of material progress and prosperity for Spain. The Muslim universities there constantly attracted non-Muslim students from all parts of Europe. The ruins of Muslim architecture, still to be seen in the Iberian Peninsula, show the astonishing progress which was attained in this field. After their political fall, the Muslims witnessed bloody persecutions in order to convert them to Christianity, and the mass destruction of their libraries, where hundreds of thousands of manuscripts were burned at a time when the printing press had not yet emerged. The loss was one which could never be repaired.

East Asia and Southeast Asia

509. The greater part of China has so far never known the political domination of Muslims. Advancing from Central Asia, the Muslims Islamicized the province of Eastern Turkestan (now Sin-Kiang); and voyaging probably by sea routes, they won to their faith the Southern province of Yun-Nan. Some ephemeral principalities came into being, but the numerous millions in China and Tibet were attracted to Islam above all by the pacific activities of Muslim missionaries. The great majority of the Chinese however has so far remained outside the monotheistic religion of Islam.

510. Quite different is the story of South-East Asia. During these last centuries, Muslim merchants of South Arabia as well as of South India travelled to this part of the continent and thanks to their selfless efforts for propagating the faith, not only the Malay Peninsula, but also

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

thousands of islands in this region have almost completely been won over to Islam. In Indonesia, and also in the Southern islands of the Philippines, Islam became predominant. Broken as it was into a large number of principalities, this region fell gradually under the yoke of the Europeans, particularly the English and the Dutch. After several centuries of foreign domination, Indonesia with its 70 million of Muslims has now regained her independence; and the Malay Peninsula, heading towards complete sovereignty inside the British Commonwealth, has obtained it more peacefully.

Africa

511. North Africa, from Egypt to Morocco, was attached to Islamic territories since very early times. In the rest of this continent, different regions have their own tales of development. East Africa was naturally the first to be influenced by Islam, thanks to its proximity to Arabia. Not only vast regions there are strongly Islamicized, but there have grown up Muslim states of considerable importance.

512. West Africa began to know Islam later, but the energetic efforts of certain Muslim rulers there, (efforts consistent with the indigenous culture) won over a large part to the faith. One meets there veritable Muslim empires throughout the centuries. According to Arab chroniclers, it is the adventurous sea-faring population of this region which discovered first the route to America, particularly to Brazil. The earliest Europeans under Christopher Columbus and his successors, found negro inhabitants there. In spite of the destruction of many historical documents, there is every reason to believe that the Muslims of Black Africa, and the Berbers participated in the colonization of America - as the name of Brazil suggests, since Birzalah is a well-known Berber tribe, and the collective name of the members of this tribe is precisely Brazil. The island of Palma, in the Atlantic, was formerly called Bene Hoare, after the name of the Berber tribe Beni Huwara - this strengthens the supposition. The relation of the Muslim West Africa with America continued till the fall of Muslim Spain and the commencement of the European voyages to America. Africa also fell a prey to European powers, such as France, Britain, Germany, Italy, Spain Portugal and Belgium. There are vast regions in the continent that never knew Islamic domination, and yet Islam is spreading there even in these days in spite of the vigilance kept and obstacles set up by their Occidental masters, and wire-pullers. With the recent decolonization, most of the countries with an Islamic majority have become independent, though some of them are subjected to the tyranny of non-Muslim dictatorship and persecutions. Other regions are marching towards ever-increasing autonomy.

Contemporary World

513. From Indonesia to Morocco, there are over forty Muslim States which are already members of the United Nations. If in Europe there is Albania, there are inside USSR other Muslim republics whose autonomy seems to increase gradually even in matters of Islamic religion. The commonwealth evolved by the British shows that accession to a collectivity of non-Muslim States does not stand in the way of the real independence of its Muslim associates, provided the men on the helm of affairs have intelligence and disinterestedness preferring national

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

interest to the personal one. If Spain, France, Russia, India, China and others educate their Muslim dependencies for veritable autonomies, the actual struggle for liberation will lose its *raison-d 'etre*, and every body will be able to live in concord and co-operation, with a sense of universal well-being.

514. Islam is represented now, in fact has been since long centuries, in all the principal races, with the exception of the Red Indians of America. The Arabic speaking peoples base their importance particularly on the fact that it is their language which is the custodian and repository of the original teaching of Islam, above all the Qur'an and the Hadith. The Indo-Pakistanis and Malay-Indonesians constitute two of the most numerous ethnic groups. The black race enjoys the particular privilege of having preserved its energies up to our own time. Erudite savants, like Prof. Arnold Toynbee of London, do not hesitate to think that the next stage of human civilization will have negroes as its leaders. Islam is actually gaining quite numerous followers in this race. And the zeal that is displayed by new converts is well known.

515. The exact number of the Muslims in the world can hardly be determined to an exact figure, for there are deaths and births, and there are conversions of which a certain number is never declared owing to personal reasons. But from all the evidence available, there is no doubt that between one-fourth and one-fifth of the descendants of Adam and Eve already turn their faces every day towards the Ka'bah (in Mecca) to proclaim aloud "*Allahu Akbar,*" that God alone is Great!

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

Chapter No: 15

The Daily Life of a Muslim

Birth

516. If a religion is not reserved for any particular race or confined to any country, but intended for all humanity, then there are two kinds of births: voluntary and involuntary.

517. There is first the voluntary birth, or conversion of an adult in full consciousness of his act and out of his free choice, relating to what the Prophet Muhammad said: "**declaration by tongue and affirmation by heart**." One takes first a bath, a shower bath preferably, in order to purify the body symbolically of the dirt of ignorance and disbelief; then one declares, usually in the presence of two witnesses, the following formula: "***I attest that there is no God if not God Himself, and I attest that Muhammad is the Messenger of God***" *(ash-hadu al-la ilaha il-lal-lah wa ash-hadu anna muham-madarrasul-ul-lah*).

518. The Prophet used to ask a new convert what his name was, and if this had any un-Islamic trait, he changed it and gave the person concerned a new and more convenient name. Thus if a man was named "Worshipper of the Ka'bah," or "Worshipper of the sun," or "the dissipated one," or "one in error," etc., the Prophet would not tolerate such appellations. Nowadays the converts usually take a new forename in Arabic, the mother-tongue of the Prophet and the tongue of the wives of the Prophet, who are the Mothers of the faithful and therefore the mother-tongue of every Muslim.

519. Arabic being the spiritual mother-tongue of every Muslim, it is his social duty to learn it, at least its alphabet, so that he should be able to read the Qur'an in the original. Since all time, converts have attached such great importance to it, that they have even adopted the Arabic script in their local languages. Such is the case with Persian, Turkish, Urdu, Malay, Pashto, Kurdish, Spanish Lithuanian, Afrikaans, etc. It is strongly recommended as a social duty that new entrants to Islam should master the Arabic script and employ it - at least in their inter-Muslim correspondence - when writing in their local languages. In fact, when the Arabic script is written with all its signs of vocalization, it is incomparably superior to any and every script in the world from the point of view of precision and absence of ambiguity, not to speak of its great aesthetic and economic values (it being a kind of shorthand writing).

519/a. When the non-Arab Muslims adopted the Arabic script to their tongues, they required some additions both in letters of the alphabet and in vowel signs. These additions differ according to countries and epochs, since there was no central academic authority in the Muslim world to evolve and impose uniform reforms. In fact there is a pressing need to hold a world congress of Muslim countries and such non-Muslim countries that use the Arabic script, in order to develop a uniform system of Arabic writing for transliterating non-Arabic languages or proper names, so that different languages should not employ different figures for representing the same non-Arabic sound, as is unfortunately the case at present. The oldest additions to the Arabic letters of the alphabet were made probably by Persians and Turks, and the oldest additional signs of vocalisation by the Spaniards for the Aljamiado (a corruption of *al-a'iamiyatu,* i.e. the non-Arabic, namely the language of the Iberian Peninsula; and hundreds of MSS are still extant in it, (including translations of the Qur'an). The Arabs have also felt the

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

need of such additions, in modern times, in order to reproduce correctly the pronunciation of foreign proper names, and to a lesser degree their dialectal peculiarities. The best and most precise of such systems proposed was, to our knowledge, the one adopted by the Osmania University of Hyderabad-Deccan and employed in some of its voluminous publications, such as the Urdu translation of the *Origines du droit des gens*by Ernest Nys. It transliterated almost twelve old or new European languages. The details of this system of transliteration into Arabic alphabet could be found in the Islamic Culture, Hyderabad, 1940. We shall give below, as illustration, a short passage in three principal European languages, transliterated into Arabic script:

520. The ordinary Arabic alphabet consists of the following 28 letters - like the number of the mansions of the moon, and admirably suited to be employed as numerals up to one thousand - which write from right to left (with semetic sequence):

ز	و	هـ	د	ج	ب	ا
7	6	5	4	3	2	1
ن	م	ل	ك	ي	ط	ح
50	40	30	20	10	9	8
ش	ر	ق	ص	ف	ع	س
300	200	100	90	80	70	60
غ	ظ	ض	ذ	خ	ث	ت
1000	900	800	700	600	500	400

520/a. The sequence of the letters has now been changed for educational purposes and the letters are arranged in dictionaries according to the similarity of their shape, and these have two forms, full and partial: partial for the normal writing, and the full at the end of every word in order to distinguish it from the following word. In this lexicographical sequence, both forms are given:

ا/ا ب/ب ت/ت ث/ث ج/ج ح/ح خ/خ
د/د ذ/ذ ر/ر ز/ز س/س ش/ش ص/ص ض/ض
ط/ط ظ/ظ ع/ع(ع) غ(غ)/غ(غ) ف/ف ق/ق
ك/ك ل/ل م/م ن/ن و/و هـ(ه)/ه ي/ي ـ

As will be seen, some of the letters have no difference in the two forms, and three letters have two forms according to whether it is in the beginning or in the middle of the word.

520/b. These 28 letters, from the right to the left, represent approximately the following sounds:

1. neutral sound: *a,i,u*, or *aa* according to the vocalisation and place.
2. *B*
3. *T*
4. *Th* (as in English with)
5. *J*
6. guttural *H*
7. guttural *Kh*

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

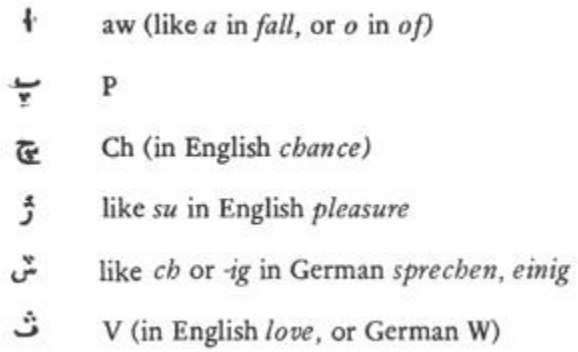
8. *D*
9. *Dh* (very near to dz).
10. *R*
11. *Z*
12. *S*
13. *Sh*
14. *Sw*
15. *Dw*
16. *Tw*
17. *Zw*
18. neutral guttural *a, i,* or *u* according to vocalisation
19. *Gh* (guttural *g*)
20. *F*
21. *Q* (guttural k).
22. *K*
23. *L*
24. *M*
25. *N*
26. *W* or *oo*, according to place
27. *H*
28. *Y* or *ee*, according to place.

520/c. And the ordinary signs of vocalisation in the Arabic script are:



These signs represent, from right to left, *a, i, u, aa,* pause, doubling. the same consonant, *an, in, un.* They are however used only when one desires to avoid possible ambiguity on the part of the reader: they are employed ordinarily neither in handwriting nor in printing, since the reader of his mother tongue does not require their help. The above mentioned system of letters and signs suffices for the basic Arabic language, even if it is not so for dialects and vulgar pronunciation of the Arabic. Of course it is not sufficient for non-Arabic languages in certain cases.

520/d. The following additions are used by and suffice for most of the non-Arabic languages, in the East, such as Persian, Kurdish, Pashto, Urdu, etc., and also in the West. Of these additions, the letters are:



Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

گ	G
ڭ	like French *gn* in *ligne*
ڽ	nasal *n*, like in *France*
ۓ	like *e* in *cafe* (near *a* in English *base*)

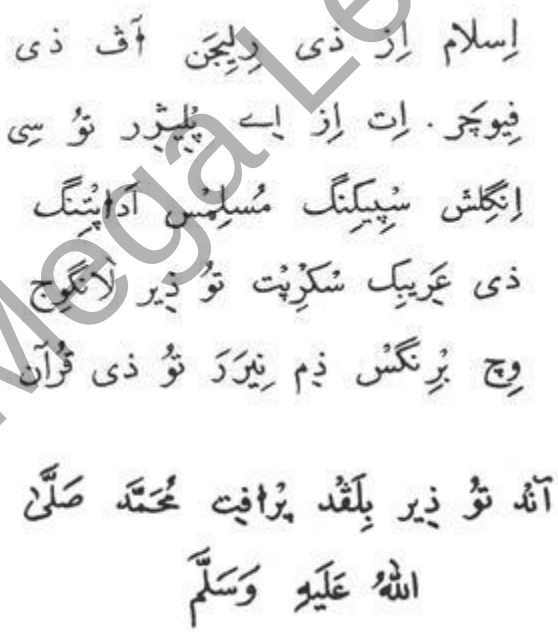
The additional signs of vocalisation are:



and stand, from right to left, for *a* in English *at,e* in English *let,* short *o* like *e* in French *de*, and the last as the long *a* in English and or *Allen*.

520/e. As an example the following English, French, and German passages are given in both the Latin and Arabic scripts, (to note that final consonants in French words which are not pronounced except when in liaison are underlined):

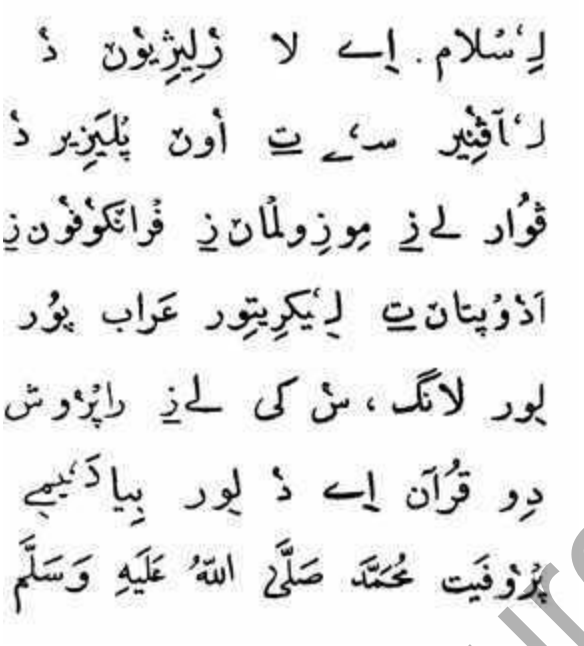
(i) *English*: Islam is the religion of the future. It is a pleasure to see English-speaking Muslims adopting the Arabic script to their language, which brings them nearer to the Qur'an and to their beloved Prophet Muhammad, *sal-lalla-hu 'alihi wa sal-lam.*



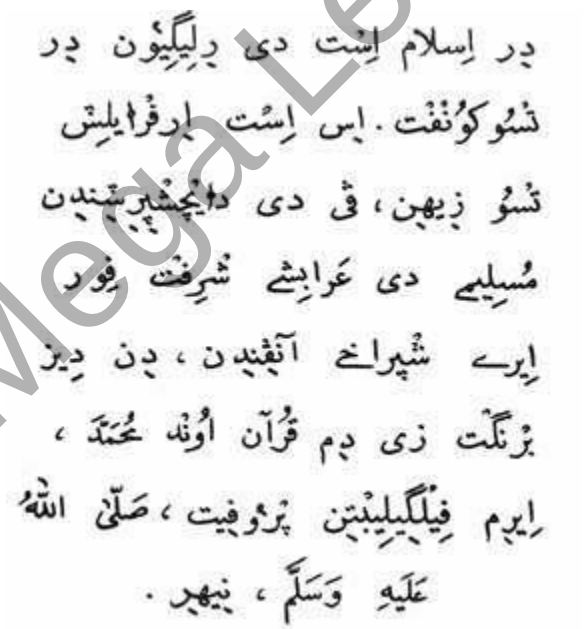
(ii) French: L'Islam est la religion de l'avenir. C'est un plaisir de voir les Musulmans fancophones adoptant l'ecriture arabe pour leur langue, çe qui les rapproached de Coran et de leur bien-aimé Prophete Muhammad *sal-lallahu 'alaihi wa sal-lam*.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture



(iii) *German:* Der Islam ist die religion der Zukunft. Es ist erfreulich zu sehen, wie die Deutsch-sprechenden Muslime die arabische Scrift fuer ihre Sprached anwenden, denn dies bringt sie dem Koran und Muhammad, ihrem vielgelibten Prophet, *sal-lal-lahu 'alaihi wa sal-lam* naeher.



521. Next comes the involuntary birth, when a child is born in a Muslim family. Immediately after the midwife has completed her task, one pronounces the *adhan* in the right ear of the child, and the *iqamah* in the left one, so that the first thing the child hears is the attestation of the faith and the call to worship of his/her Creator and for his/her own well-being. The *adhan*[1] or the Call to the Prayer is as follows (for Arabic text and transliteration see Appendix A):

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

God is Great. (repeated four times)
I attest that there is no God if not God Himself. (twice)
I attest that Muhammad is the Messenger of God. (twice)
Rise up to Worship (twice),
Rise up to Well-being (twice),
God is Great (twice),
There is no God if not God Himself (once).

The *iqamah* or the establishment of the service of worship is formulated in the following terms (for text and transliteration see Appendix B).

God is Great, God is Great,
I attest that there is no God if not God Himself,
I attest that Muhammad is the Messenger of God,
Rise up to Worship,
Rise up to Well-being,
Lo, the service of worship is ready. Lo, the service of worship is ready,
God is Great, God is Great.
There is no God if not God Himself.

Early Life

522. When the hair of a child is cut for the first time, its weight in silver or the equivalent in current money is distributed amongst tne poor. If one has the means, agoat or a sheep is also slaughtered to entertain the poor and friends. This is called *'aqiqa*.

523. No age limit is fixed, yet circumcision is practised on male children at an early age. This is not obligatory for adult converts.

524. When a child arrives at the age to commence his studies, some time after the fourth year, a family feast is organized, when the child takes his first lesson. As a good omen, one recites before the child the first five verses of Chapter 96 of the Qur'an consisting of the very first revelation that had come to the unlettered Prophet of Islam relating to reading and writing. The child is made to repeat them word for word. Here is the translation (for Arabic text and transliteration see Appendix C):

With the name of God, the Most Merciful, the All-Merciful! Read with the name of thy Lord Who createth, Createth man from a clot. Read: And thy Lord is the Most Bounteous. Who teacheth (man) by the pen. Teacheth man that which he knew not.

525. When the child is capable of so doing, he is taught how to pray, learning gradually by heart the relevant texts, of which we shall speak later in detail. From his or her seventh year, parents must apply sanctions so that the child becomes accustomed to prayer.

526. To fast is obligatory, as is prayer, when a child reaches puberty. In Muslim families, however, the child often gets accustomed to it earlier. In fact it is an occasion of great rejoicing and festivity, when the child observes the first fast in the month of Ramadan. Generally at the age of twelve the child begins to fast for only one day in the first instance, increasing the number gradually in the years to come, so that the child gets accustomed to bear the strain of the fast for an entire month. This happens when he or she becomes a major.

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

530. In connection with monetary matters, it may be borne in mind that a Muslim is not authorized to participate in transactions based on interest on loans or in games of chance, lotteries and similar speculative things. No-one pays interest voluntarily. Demanding interest on loans advanced to private individuals should be avoided. The question of bank interest on savings is complicated, and depends on the mechanism of the administration of each bank. If the bank is usurious, profits accruing from its gains are also illicit, yet in certain countries it so happens that there are no other banks, and if one refuses to take the interest, the bank remits such unclaimed amounts to institutions which are sometimes injurious to Islam, such as missionaries who seek the apostasy of Muslims. Therefore, one should recover the interest on one's deposits from the bank, but instead of spending it on one's own person or family, utilize it for charitable purposes. The great jurist Sarakhsi says: "gains accruing from illicit means must be got rid of by giving them away in charity."

531. Insurance with government agencies and with mutualistic societies is lawful, with capitalistic companies this is not so.

Marriage

532. A Muslim male may marry not only a Muslim woman but also a woman of Jewish or Christian faith (Qur'an 5:5); but not an Idolatress, polytheist or atheist. A Muslim woman is not allowed to marry (or even remain in marriage to) a non-Muslim, of no matter which category, (Qur'an 2:221, and particularly 60:10) .

533. In the case of the conversion of a married man to Islam if his wife is Jew or Christian and does not want to be converted with her husband, the marriage continues undisturbed. If the wife is of the prohibited categories, and persists in her irreligion, conjugal life must cease immediately; she should be given a reasonable time to think over, and in the final resort divorce will have to take place.

534. In the case of a married woman embracing Islam, when the husband is not Muslim, conjugal life ceases immediately, and after a reasonable delay given to the husband, the wife should demand judicial separation.

Death

535. A Muslim on his deathbed tries to pronounce the formula of the faith: *"There is no God if not God Himself, Muhammad is the Messenger of God.*" People around the patient also help by repeating it to the person in his death pangs. It is called *talqin.* Before the body gets stiff one places the hands as if in the service of worship, either crossed on the chest, or letting stretch on the sides.

536. The body of the dead person is washed and cleansed, when possible, before burial. It is shrouded in three simple sheets of cloth, after the usual dress is taken off. When bathing, water is poured for the first time mixed with soap or similar material; for the second time the traces of such material are washed off; and the third time water mixed with a certain quantity of camphor, is poured on the whole body. When bathing is not practicable, then *tayammum* suffices (see ablution 552). After enshrouding the dead body, a funeral service is celebrated (for method see 569). This service can be performed in the absence of the body, which might have received burial elsewhere in the world. The grave is dug parallel to Mecca, in so far as this is practicable and the head of the dead is turned slightly to the right side, so that it faces the Ka'bah. While

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

placing the dead body in the grave, one pronounces the formula: "*With the name of God and on the religion of the Messenger of God*" (for Arabic text and transliteration, see Appendix D). Muslims believe that the dead person is visited in the grave by two angels, who put to him certain questions as to his beliefs. Hence after the burial, one pronounces on the grave a text, as if influencing the dead how to reply, the translation (Arabic text and transliteration, Appendix E) is given below: "O male (or female) servant of God, remember the covenant made while leaving the world, that is, the attestation that there is no God if not God Himself, and that Muhammad is the Messenger of God, and the belief that Paradise is a certainty, that hell is a verity, 'that the questioning in the grave is a certainty, that the Doomsday shall come, there being no doubt about it; that God will resuscitate those who are in graves, that thou hast accepted God as thy lord, Islam as thy religion, Muhammad as thy prophet, the Qur'an as thy guide, the Ka'bah as thy direction to turn to for the service of worship and that all the believers are thy brethren. May God keep thee firm in this trial." For the Qur'an, 14:27, says: "*God confirmeth those who believe by a firm saying in the life of this world and in the Hereafter, and God sendeth wrong-doers astray, and God doeth what He will*." And again (cf. 89:27-30): "*O thou soul at peace, return unto thy Lord, content in His good pleasure! Enter thou among My bondmen! Enter thou My paradise*!"

537. It is forbidden to spend lavishly on graves, which should be as simple as possible; one should rather spend the amount on the poor and the deserving, and pray God that the recompense of this charity may go to the deceased person.

General Habits

538. Apart from the daily services of worship [prayer/*salaat*] and the annual fasting, certain practices are recommended to Muslims. The most important is the continual perusal of the text and the commentary or translation of the Qur'an, meditating over its contents, in order to assimilate them in one's life. What can be more blissful than to invoke the Word of God!

539. One should say *Bismil-lah* (i.e., with the name of God) when commencing any and every action, and *alhamdu lil-lah* (i.e., thank God) after terminating it. When something is intended or promised for the future, say immediately *insha-Allah* (if God be willing).

540. When two Muslims meet, they greet by saying *Salam 'alaik* (or *as-salam 'alaik*). One can reply likewise, or say *Wa 'alaikamus-salam*. These are more comprehensive than the formulas good morning, good evening, etc., which are the remnants of the days of ignorance.

541. One should develop the habit of glorifying God when going to sleep and when rising up (***sub ha-nal-lah*** is the simplest formula), and also invoking the mercy of God on the Prophet, for instance in the following formula: ***Al-la-humma sal-li 'ala Muhammad wa barik wa sal-lim*** (i.e., O God, incline to Muhammad, bless him and take him in Thy safeguard).

542. The Prophet preferred the right side: When putting on the sandals, the right foot first, the left one afterwards, and just the contrary when putting them off; when putting on a shirt, the right arm first, the left one later; when combing, the right half of the head first, the left one later; when entering a house or a mosque, the right foot first, the left one later, but when entering the bathroom or the water closet, the left foot first, and while coming out of it, the right foot first. When putting off a dress, foot-wear, etc., the left arm or the left foot first. When distributing something, he began with those who were on his right hand, ending with those on the left.

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

542/a. Prayers to God are to be constant, for each and every act of our life, be that for natural needs or deliberate acts, even as the most solemn of them, *viz*. the preparation for the service of worship. Formulas of prayer, used by the Holy Prophet for some such occasions have been referred to above (see 166/b). Others could be found in detailed and more voluminous works.

Food and Drink

543. The most important points in this respect are the following:

544. Pork, (flesh and fat) is forbidden in all its forms, in the same way as alcoholic drinks. A misunderstanding requires to be dissipated: The word *khamr*, used by the Qu'ran, although it meant originally the wine made of grape juice, yet already in the time of the Prophet the term signified any alcoholic drink irrespective of the material. So when the verse of *khamr* was revealed, Muslims of Madinah spilt their stocks of all kinds of alcoholic drinks, and not merely those of wine. It should be noted that in Madinah it was from date fruits that fermented drinks were manufactured. As to meat, a Muslim cannot consume animals or birds not ritually slaughtered. The Qur'an (5:3) says:

"Forbidden unto you (for food) are carrion, and blood, and swine-flesh, and that which hath been dedicated unto any other than God, and the strangled, and the dead through beating, and the dead through falling from a height, and that which hath been killed by the goring of horns, and the devoured of the wild beasts, saving that which ye make lawful by the death-stroke of slaughtering, and that which hath been immolated unto idols . . . but whosoever is forced by hunger, not by will to sin, for him lo! God is Forgiving, Merciful."

Even lawful animals and birds, if slaughtered by non-Muslims, remain unlawful to consume except when slaughtered by members of those communities who possess a divinely revealed Book (Christian and Jews for instance), provided they observe rules of their religion in the matter of ritual slaughtering. A chicken strangled by a Christian does not become lawful any more than the one strangled by a Muslim himself.

545. The ritual of slaughtering is performed by pronouncing the formula *Bismillah* (with the name of God), and cutting the throat, i.e., the tube of respiration, the tube of food and drink, and the two jugular veins; not touching the spinal column, much less severing the head or skinning the animal before it is completely dead.

546. The use of gold and silver plates or utensils for food is also forbidden to Muslims. The Prophet has said: "**The use of gold and pure silk is forbidden for men, allowed for womenfolk**." There are some exceptions so, the use of silk as military dress is permitted. The use of gold is allowed for dental surgery. The caliph 'Uthman had his teeth covered with gold; and a certain 'Arfajah ibn As'ad reports that the Prophet himself had allowed him to have a nose made of gold to replace the one he had lost in war, the artificial nose made of silver having rotted.

Dress and Coiffure

547. The use of cloth made entirely of natural silk is forbidden to Muslim men and also garments of a red colour. The Prophet grew a beard, and recommended the Muslims to do likewise.

MegaLecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

548. Muslim women should wear a dress which covers their body in a proper manner, avoiding high jumpers, decollete and transparent materials which show parts of their body. They should not try to resemble men in dress and coiffure and avoid all that is characteristic of glamour girls. Further, when they celebrate the service of worship, they should cover their head. The Prophet recommended that women wear pantaloons. Their gowns should never be higher than the middle of the tibia, preferably down to the ankles (as we read in a Hadith reported by Abu Da'wud, Tirmidhi, lbn Hanbal, and many others).

Service of Worship and Ablutions

549. "**Cleanliness is half of the faith**," says the Prophet. So, when intending to celebrate the service of worship, one has first to be clean in body. Ordinarily there are simple ablutions for the daily services. A bath, preferably a shower bath, is prescribed for other occasions (in the case of both men and women after the intercourse of husband and wife; for men after a wet dream; for women, after the menses and after recovering from the flow resulting from childbirth). For the weekly Friday service, it is strongly recommended to take a bath.

550. The method of bath is that one should make ablutions, and then pour water over the entire body, from head to foot, at least three times. If one takes a bath in a tub, one may pour clean water, after emptying the tub, over the head and shoulders, by a jug, for instance, if there is no shower apparatus.

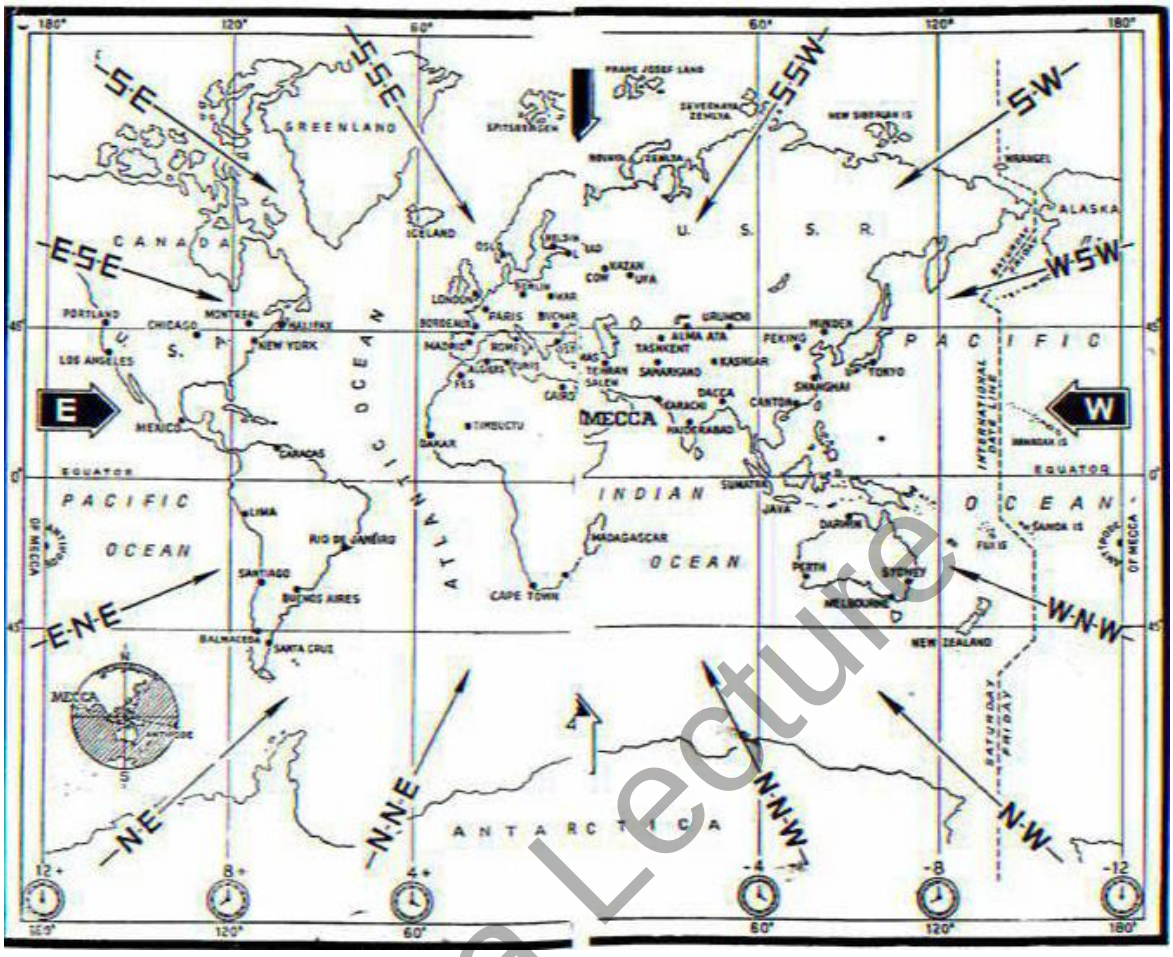
551. Ablutions are made in the following manner: The first step is to formulate the intention of purification, saying *bismillah* (with the name of God), wash the hands up to the wrists, rinse the mouth with water, clean the nostrils with water, wash the face from the forehead to chin and from ear to ear, wash the right arm and then the left one upto the elbows (inclusive), pass the wet fingers on the head and in the ear holes (and according to some schools also the neck), then wash first the right foot and then the left one up to the ankle - doing each act thrice (unless water is lacking, in which case once is sufficient).

552. If there is absolutely no water to be found, it is permitted to do the *tayammumm* dust ablution. This is also permitted to the sick, who are not to touch water on medical grounds. In this case, we have to formulate the intention of purification, pronounce the name of God (Bismillah), place the hands on clean dust (even on a wall in the house) and pass the palms on the face, place the hands again on the dust and pass the left palm on the right forearm, then the right palm on the left forearm. It is symbolic of man's humility before God Almighty.

553. The ablutions are not to be renewed for every service of prayer, but only when the previous ones have become invalidated through sleep, natural emission of gas, urination or the flow of any substance from the private parts, or vomiting. It ought to be noted that one should ordinarily use water in the water closet - mere paper is not sufficient. The *tayammum* is to be renewed for every service.

554. For the prayer services, one should also have a clean dress, a clean place, and know the direction of the *Qiblah* (Ka'bah in Mecca). With the help of an ordinary world-map

MegaLecture



- it would be easy to find out the direction of Mecca (in Arabia, towards the middle of its Western coast); then a compass will indicate the exact position to be taken up. People in England, for instance, will turn to the South-East, those in the U.S.A. to East-South-East. It might be noted however that the world is spherical and in view of this, the shortest distance between a place and the Ka'bah is to be sought. For those in New York, it would be nearer to turn E.S.E., but for those in Alaska, North, (consult a globe). The antipode of the Ka'bah is somewhere near Sandwich or Samoa islands, and when passing this spot, on a boat for instance, all the four directions would be equidistant and the direction would therefore be left to the choice of the person leading the service, even as inside the Ka'bah. [*For why the direction for North America is E.S.E. and not N.E., please see* Footnote A]

555. There are five daily services of worship, of which the second one is replaced every Friday by a solemn congregational service. There are two annual services, in addition, for celebrating the feast at the end of the month of fasts, and feast of sacrifices coinciding with the pilgrimage at Mecca. All services resemble one another in form, but not in length, with the exception of the funeral service, of which we shall speak later in paragraph 569. Thus, the first daily prayer at dawn has only two *rak'ats* (the term is explained below); the second and third (early and later afternoon services) have four each, the fourth (early evening) has three, and the fifth (late evening) has four. The Friday and the festival services have only two *rak'ats* each. The Prophet has strongly recommended the addition, after the fifth daily service, of another service, called *witr* consisting of three *rak'ats*.

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

555/a.. Only five services of worship are obligatory daily, but the Prophet had the habit of adding at the time of each service some additional services which constitute highly recommended acts. So a service of two *rak'ats* before the morning prayer; for the midday prayer, a service of four *rak'ats* (or two services of two *rak'ats* each) before the obligatory service, and another one of two*rak'ats* after the same; a service of two *rak'ats* after the evening service; and a service of three *rak'ats* according to the Hanafite school, but according to others first a service of two *rak'ats* and then another of a single *rak'at* - after the night prayer is highly recommended. This last is called *witr.* Apart from these, one may celebrate as many services as one likes as *nafal* (supererogatory) acts of devotion. The more the service the more the merit. Further, when one enters the mosque, it is recommended to celebrate a service of two *rak'ats* as *tahiyatul-masjid* (as an offering to the house of God).

556. The method of celebrating the service is that a person makes the necessary ablutions, selects a proper place, turns in the direction of the Ka'bah, raises the hands up to one's ears and formulates precisely the intention:

"I intend to celebrate such and such service of worship to God, with its so many *rak'ats,* turning towards the Ka'bah, individually/collectively as the Imarn, collectively as the follower of the Imam" [(3)] (see also fig. 1.)

After this he pronounces the formula *"Allahu Akbar*" (God is Great), and lowers the hands. According to Malikite and Shi'ite schools, the hands should hang loose on both sides touching the thighs, (fig. 2a). But according to all the other schools, hands should be crossed on the chest, the left hand touching the body and the right one placed over it. (fig. 2b). Now the service begins, and he should neither talk to others, nor look anywhere except the point where he is going to place his forehead in prostration. At every movement, (bending, prostrating, sitting, etc.), he pronounces "*Allahu Akbar*. "

557. The service commences with a hymn (Appendix F), followed by the first chapter of the Qur'an (Appendix G), then some other chapter or verses of the Qur'an any of those contained in Appendix C, H, I,J,K, for instance. With the exception of the parts of the Qur'an, all the texts are recited silently; even those parts of the Qur'an said aloud are only during the first, fourth and fifth services, and for Friday and Festival services, and these by the imam alone.

558. After having completed the recitation of the Qur'an, mentioned above, the person bows down, places the hands on knees without bending them, in which position he pronounces thrice "Glory to God, the Most Grand" (Appendix L), (fig. 3). Then he rises up and says: "Our Lord, praise be to Thee" (Appendix M), without folding the hands, but letting them hang loose by the sides. Afterwards he prostrates placing the forehead, nose and palms on the ground, (fig. 4a), with knees bent, (fig. 4b), and pronounces, in this position, thrice "Glory to my Lord, the Most High" (Appendix N): he then seats himself (fig. 5a) on the left foot keeping the right foot erect, heel pointing skywards and the toes bent outwards, (fig. 5b), and beseeches the pardon of God (Appendix O); then he makes a second prostration and repeats the glory of God thrice as in the first prostration. Thereafter he rises up. All these, movements of standing, bowing, and prostrating twice constitute collectively one rak'at.

559. The second *rak'at* begins with the recitation of the first chapter of the Qur'an (Appendix G) followed by some other part of it (any text contained in Appendix H I J K for instance) yet without the hymn. Thereafter he bows low and glorifies God thrice as before, rises up and thanks God, and then prostrates twice reciting the same texts as before. At this stage he does

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

not rise up, but remains seated on the left foot and invokes the presence of God and attests to the faith (Appendix P).

560. As the first (dawn) service (and also the Friday and Festival service) consists of only two *rak'ats*, after this invocation of the presence of God, one adds a supplication (Appendix Q), whereafter to terminate the service turns the face first to the right, saying "*as-Salamu 'alaikum wa rahmat-ull-lah* " (peace with you and the mercy of God) (fig. 6a), then to the left, (fig. 6b), when according to most schools one should recite the same formula, and the service is completed. If the service has more than two *rak'ats,* after the invocation of the presence of God (Appendix P) he rises up again, recites the first chapter of the Qur'an (Appendix G) without adding any other part, bows low, rises up and makes two prostrations with their accompanying formulae. If the service has three *rak'ats* as in the early evening service, he remains sitting, recites the invocation of Divine presence and the supplication, and closes with the salutation. If the service has four *rak'ats,*as in the two afternoon services, and in the night service, he rises up immediately after the two prostrations of the third *rak'at*, recites again the first chapter of the Qur'an (Appendix G), bows low, rises up, makes the two prostrations and then remains sitting to invoke the Divine presence, the supplication, and then ends with the salutation, as mentioned in the beginning of this paragraph.

Some Particularities

561. The Shafi'i and Hanbali schools add a prayer of invocation called *qunut* in the Dawn service. So when a person rises up after bowing low in the second *rak 'at,* one recites this prayer (Appendix U) before prostration. The other schools do not observe it, contending that this practice of the Prophet was only temporary.

562. The Hanafi school has also a *qunut,* (Appendix V) but in the third *rak'at* of the *witr* service, which is celebrated after the late evening service. So, after ending the recitation of the Qur'an in the third *rak'at* and before bowing low, they pronounce this prayer, and then they bow and complete the service in the normal way. In the case of congregational service, however, one should follow the *imam,* whatever may be his school.

563. Again at the end of the second *rak'at* when the person sits for the first time to invoke the presence of God, some schools ask also blessing for the Prophet, others do that in the final second sitting only, in the supplication (Appendix Q).

Difference of Schools

563/a. (i) There are three main groups among Muslims: Sunnis, Shi'as and Abadites (nicknamed Kharijites), with several subdivisions. They have a few differences in matters of both dogma and cult. This elementary manual is not the proper place to trace the history and details of these differences. However in a cosmopolitan town, when one sees Muslims of different schools practising the same act differently, one asks wherefrom this divergence? Leaving aside the differences in dogma, which come from the deduction of the leading theologians for each school, in the matter of cult let us know from the outset that nothing has been invented by anybody, but all comes from the Prophet himself or is deduced from the report of his saying or doing.

(ii) It is the Prophet himself who has sometimes changed his practice in certain acts or formulae to recite, sometimes he express ly mentioned that his former practice is to be abandoned (for

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

instance, in *ruku'* the Prophet originally let his arms hang loose, yet later he put his hands on his knees and forbade the former practice). At others, he did not say anything when he changed his practice. In a few cases the discussion arose several generations after the Prophet, and the savants diverged as to the meaning to give to a report on the practice of the Prophet.

(iii) It is evident therefore that practically all the differences emanate from the divergent practices of the Prophet himself, and nobody has the right to despise anyone of them. Often there are no data to determine the chronology of the diverging ways of performing the same act, in order to presume that the latter in time must abrogate the former one. If a Shafi'ite, for instance, refuses to celebrate the service under a Hanafite *imam,* that means that this Shafi'ite refuses to follow the Prophet himself when this latter practised in a manner not known in the Shafi'ite school. What an enormity!

(iv) In the Islamic literature, one of the titles of the Prophet Muhammad is the "beloved of God" *(Habib-Allah*), and the Holy Qur'an (33:21) expressly says that in Muhammad there is the best model for Muslims to follow. It is touching to note, that in His love, God has willed that any and every unabrogated act of the Prophet should be followed by Muslims. In case of the divergent ways of performing the same act, there was no other possibility except that some do in one way and others in another. So God seems to have willed to perpetuate all the acts of His beloved Prophet by means of the different schools. Let there be mutual respect and tolerance.

Service of Istikharah (Prayer for Asking Guidance)

563/b. When one is in perplexity, the Prophet has recommended to pray to God for guidance, and not resort to games of chance or other superstitious methods. For this purpose, one has to celebrate a service of two *rak'ats* as supererogation (*nafilah*). After the obligatory service of *Isha* (5th service of the day) and *witr* that follows it, when one is ready to go to bed, one should celebrate the service of *istikharah* in the following manner: in the first *rak'at* one should recite, after the *Fatihah* (Appendix G), Surah 109 (Appendix Z/i), and in the second *rak'at* after the *Fatihah*(Appendix G), one should recite Surah 112 (Appendix J), all the rest of this service is like any other normal service. After the final salutation, one should turn to God with humility and devotion and pronounce the prayer taught by the Prophet (Appendix Z/ii) from memory if one can, by reading, preferably in Arabic (although a translation would also do for those who cannot read Arabic) if necessary. Thereafter one would go to bed always remembering God in his thoughts. Next day when he rises, the first idea that comes to his mind will be of divine inspiration. If no idea occurs to the mind the first day, let one repeat the same service a second and third night, and so on, until there is an inspiration, while getting up in the morning, for resolving the problem which has agitated.

Disturbance in the Service

564. If a person should speak to anybody during the service, let out wind, laugh aloud, or eat or drink anything, this will annuls the service. It should be recommenced, with fresh ablution in the second eventuality. However, if one forgets some act during the service, which he remembers at a later stage, one need not recommence the service, but continue it to the end, and prostrate twice after the Invocation and Supplication (Appendix P, Q) and then pronounce the salutation. During these prostrations of Forgetfulness, one may recite the same glorification of God as usual (Appendix N) or use another, which is more appropriate (Appendix R), namely "Glory to the One Who alone does neither sleep nor forget."

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

565. If a person should arrive somewhat late to join the congregational service, he need not bother about the portion already accomplished, but follow the *imam*. In case a whole *rak'at* or more has been missed, then one should rise up when the *imam* offers salutation, and complete by himself the *rak'at* or *rak'ats* which he has missed, recite the Invocation, etc., and salutation to terminate the service. As an example, suppose he joins the congregation during the prostration of the second *rak 'at* of the early evening service, he will perform in the company of the *imam* only one *rak'at.*So one should rise up, perform a *rak'at* and then sit down for Invocation - then perform another *rak'at* with invocation and supplication, then offer the salutation to terminate. If one joins the *imam*in *ruku* (inclining) position, one has got the whole *rak 'at*, and needs not bother about the lost portion, such as the recitation of the Qur'an. But if one joins the *imam* after the *ruku'*, standing or prostrating or else then the whole *rak 'at* is lost and should be made up at the end when the *imam* has offered salutation.

General

566. If the right direction of the Ka'bah is not known, one should guess it, and that suffices, God being present everywhere. During the service of worship, one must behave with dignity and concentration: one must look at the spot where one is going to place one's forehead, (during the *ruku* on one's toes, and during the *sajdah* the eyes open), and one should never look towards the sky, much less to right and left. Similarly one must remain firm, and it is a very bad habit to advance or retreat during the several acts of prostrating and returning to the standing position. The large toe serves as a pivot.

567. After the service, one may pray to God for whatever one desires, the best prayers are those which have been taught by the Qur'an itself.

568. As the texts in the service ought to be recited in Arabic, one should learn them by heart, commencing with the *Fatihah (*first chapter of the Qur'an, Appendix G), which is considered the most essential part and the *sine qua non* of the service of worship.

Funeral Service

569. The funeral service differs from other services of worship in form. One makes ablutions, turns to the Ka'bah, raises the hands up to the ears, formulates the intention, after the usual *Allahu Akbar*, the *Fatihah* and some other part of the Qur'an (as in all the services) yet one does neither bow nor prostrate. In fact, after the recitation of the Qur'an, one pronounces again *Allahu Akbar*, remains standing up, and recites a prayer to God to pardon all Muslims, dead or alive, preceded by the invocation of mercy to the Prophet (Appendix S). Then says *Allahu Akbar* for the third time and prays particularly for the deceased present (Appendix T); then says *Allahu Akbar* for the fourth time and salutes at the end.

Sickness and Travelling

570. If one is sick and confined to bed, one can pray as best one can, sitting or even lying. In the case of a sitting position, the act of bowing is performed in a way that the head does not touch the ground. In the case of celebrating the prayer while lying, one only thinks in one's mind of the postures of standing, bowing, prostrating, etc., and recites at each stage the appropriate text.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

571. Persons in travel have been permitted by the Prophet to shorten their services of four *rak'ats* celebrating only two *rak'ats;.* Others who are pressed for time, have the permission of the Prophet to combine the services. For instance, the second and third, between midday and sunset, at any moment, and the fourth and the fifth any time during the night.

Hours of Services

572. Usually the first service (*Fajr*) must be celebrated when one first rises, i.e., between dawn and sunrise. The second (*Zuhr*), after the sun passes the meridian at midday; the time for this service continues for two to three hours. The third (*'Asr*), late in the afternoon [just before the sun begins to decline], before the sunset. The fourth (*Maghrib*) immediately after sunset - the time continues, for about an hour and a half. The fifth and last (*Isha*), when the twilight disappears, any time during the night before dawn breaks, preferably before midnight.

573. It will be noticed that these timings are practicable and without inconvenience only in equatorial and tropical countries. As one mounts towards the poles, the difference between the length of the day and the night becomes so great in the summer and winter, that the movements of the sun are of little help. At the two parallels 90º N. and 90º S, that is at the poles, the sun does not set for six months continuously, with the exception of the one day of the first equinox, and then remains risen above the horizon for the other six months continuously, with the exception of one day of the second equinox. Even much below:

at 72º North from May 9 to August 4
at 70º North from May 17 to July 27
at 68º North from May 27 to July 17
at 66º North from June 13 to June 29

the sun remains continuously above the horizon and sets neither during the "day", nor during the "night". In the corresponding period of winter, the sun remains below the horizon and never rises at all throughout the 24 hour day. At 66º N., on June 30, the sun rises at 0.3 o'clock and sets at 23.46 o'clock. Yet on July 2, it rises at 0.3 o'clock and sets at 23.32 o'clock, and so on; that is to say, in the remaining few minutes when the sun remains set, all the three nightly services of *maghrib, 'isha* and *fajr* are to be celebrated. Men have been crossing these regions for a long time, and they are much more frequented now; they are even being settled. It is known that the Soviet camps contain many Muslim labourers. It goes without saying, that in these abnormal climates one can depend on the movements of the sun neither for services of worship nor for yearly fasting. Even Friday gets complicated if it is to recur on every seventh setting of the sun. The jurists have therefore recommended that one should follow in those places the movements of the clock, and not those of the sun. But the question arises where to fix the line separating the normal zone of countries from the abnormal one, where one enjoys these concessions? Similarly it becomes necessary to find out exactly the hours to be observed in the abnormal zone. The rational solution, which has now been approved by the assemblies of the *'ulama* of different Muslim countries is the following:

573/a. The Qur'an (2:286) has laid down that "*God tasketh not a person if not according to its capacity.*" And again (94:5-6) "*Because with the difficulty there is a facility*. *Verily with difficulty there is a facility*." And the Prophet has not only confirmed it by demanding his subordinates and delegates, "**Facilitate and do not cause difficulties and do not cause people to detest (the Islamic law), but treat people like brothers**." Apart from these general directions, the Prophet has even replied to the question of abnormally long days in an apocalypitc Hadith, reported by Muslim, Abu Dawud, Tirmidhi, lbn Majah and others,

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

"**When the Dajjal (literally the great deceiver) comes to mislead people, he will remain on the earth for forty days, the first of which as long as a year, the second as long as a month, the third as long as a week, and the remaining days as your normal days**. One of the Companions rose to demand, "On the day which will be as long as a year, would it suffice to celebrate only five services of worship of the day?" The Prophet replied, "**No, but calculate**."

The first day described here resembles the conditions obtained at the 90º latitude (North or South), i.e., on both poles. The second day for those a little south of 68º of the North latitude, and the third those a little south of 66º latitude. Basing themselves upon this direction of the Prophet, the assemblies of Muslim *'ulama* have commanded to follow in such condition the movement of the clock and not of the sun, and to facilitate that task, they command to follow the times calculated for 45º (North or South) for countries lying between those points and the pole.

574. The hours of sunrise and sunset remain practically the same during all the seasons on the equator; the greatest instability, or rather the greatest and most unbearable rigour is found at the poles. Geographers have divided the distance between the equator and the poles into 90 degrees. Therefore the line of division has to to be fixed at 45º North and 45º South. Those people who live in the equatorial and tropical countries, i.e., between the two latitudes of 45º on both sides of the equator, must follow the movements of the sun with their variations during the different seasons. And those who live beyond this belt, must follow the hours obtaining at 45º latitude, without regard to their local times of sunrise and sunset. It will happen that in these abnormal regions one will break the fast when the sun will still be shining, in certain seasons, and in certain others will continue to abstain from eating and drinking when the sun should have set long ago. For the timing on 45º, see below (paragraph 583).

575. This division at the two latitudes of 45º N. and 45º S. divides the earth theoretically in two equal parts, but as a matter of fact more than three-quarters of the habitable world is included in the middle zone. An overwhelming majority of the inhabitants of the globe live in the middle zone, which includes all of Africa, India and Oceania, practically all of China and the Americas (with the exception of Canada and the extremities of Argentina and Chile). It may be brought pointedly into relief that this division leaves untouched the millenary habitudes of the Muslims: the countries Islamized in the time of the Prophet and his companions - such as Arabia, Syria, Turkey, Egypt, Spain, Italy, Southern France, Iran, Turkistan, India and Pakistan, even as far as the populous Malaysia and Indonesia - these will continue to practise that to which they have been for centuries accustomed. In Europe, concessions affect the regions above Bordeaux - Bucharest - Sevastopol; in North America those above Halifax - Portland; and in the southern Hemisphere only some small parts of the South of Argentina and Chile and a few islands south of New Zealand. The Muslim communities of England, France, Germany, Holland, Scandinavia, Finland, Kazan, Canada, etc., will profit by this precision of the Muslim law, which is deduced from the directions given by the holy Prophet himself, explained in the preceding paragraph. By consulting a map of the world, like the one included herewith, one can easily find out whether one lives inside or outside the middle zone, beyond 45º latitude.

MegaLecture

The Service of Worship: Why in Arabic Alone?

Paragraph 575/a. (i.) It is well known that during their service of worship [prayer, in Arabic - *Salaat*], Muslims employ only the Arabic language: They recite certain passages of the Qur'an and pronounce certain formulae to attest to the sublimity of God and humility of man. This is done both by the Arabs and the non-Arabs, even by those who do not know a word of Arabic. Such was the case in time of the Prophet Muhammad and such has been the case (since to this day, whatever the country and the tongue of Muslims.

(ii) At first sight it may seem normal and even desirable that the faithful should address his prayer to the Lord in a way that he is fully conscious of what he says. Of course, the mother-tongue, the medium best suited for the purpose, the worship being performed in as many languages as are spoken by the Muslim community. But a little deeper consideration shows that there are reasons that militate strongly against such a solution.

(iii) First of all, a metaphysical or psychological point. According to the Holy Qur'an (33:6), the wives of the Prophet are mothers of the Muslims. We know that all of these revered ladies spoke Arabic. Therefore Arabic is the mother-tongue of all the Muslims. Who can object to praying in one's mother-tongue!

(iv) Perhaps this argument does not suffice to convince everybody. Pushing further, it is noteworthy that according to the Islamic belief the Qur'an is the Word of God, the recitation of which is considered by the Qur'an as something meritorious. This is evident from the spiritual point of view. The faithful journey's unto the Lord through the sacred word of the Lord Himself. His Word is the path towards Him, something like a wire to conduct the electrical current that illuminates a lightbulb. The journey unto the Lord is of course the ultimate goal that every soul aspires to reach. The original Word has been revealed in Arabic: any translation would be a human work and human word, and this can scarcely serve the purpose of this mystical journey.

(v) For those who would seek more mundane reasons, let us recall first that a clear distinction is to be made between prayer, in the sense of supplication (*du'a*), and the prayer in the sense of the service of worship to God (*salaat*), in so far as *du'a* is concerned - i.e., the prayer in general and outside the formal way of worshiping God, the tête-à-tête with the Lord *(munajaat*)- nobody has ever raised the slightest objection to the liberty of the individual to address one's need, one's petitions to the Lord in any language and in any physical posture one prefers. It is purely personal and private affair and concerns the relations of the individual creature directly with the Creator. The *salaat* [prayer], on the contrary, is a collective and public affair, where the needs and requirements of other companions of the congregation are evidently to be taken into consideration. It is pointedly to bring into relief that the *salaat* is in principle and preferably to be performed in common along with others (*jama'at*): the *salaat* individually and in isolation is only tolerated and never recommended, the preference going to the congregational service. Let us see now more closely the diverse aspects of this collective and public act which is performed in the company of others.

(vi) Had Islam been a regional, racial or national religion, one would certainly have employed the current language of the region, of the race, of the nation. But quite different are the requirements of a universal religion, whose members speak hundreds of regional languages - of which each is incomprehensible to all the rest of the human groups - belonging to all the races and inhabitants of all the regions of the earth. Our life today is getting more and more cosmopolitan, and practically every town has Muslims belonging to several linguistic groups, both from among the permanent residents and the travellers in transit, and has to take into consideration the aspect of courtesy and hospitality to strangers. Supposing an Englishman goes to China and knows not a word of its language, and supposing he hears in the street something like "*chen chu chih shan*", evidently he would not understand what is intended thereby; and if it is the regional translation of the well-known call to prayer, the *Allahu Akbar*, he would fail to perceive it and would miss the weekly prayer on Friday, or the congregational prayer of the moment. (Incidentally, the mosques in China do not ordinarily resemble those in England, France or elsewhere in the Orient, and ordinarily have no minarets either). Similarly a Chinese Muslim, travelling through other countries, would find nothing in common with his co-

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

religionists if these others said their collective worship in their local tongues. So a universal religion requires certain basic things to be common to all the faithful. The call to prayer and the formulae to be recited in the act of worship evidently constitute part of such fundamental and basic elements of the practice of the cult. A passing remark may be made about the fact that sometimes words of two different languages sound alike but have different signification's, at times the harmless word of one signifying something ridiculous or obscene in another. Such a risk is greater in languages with which one is utterly unfamiliar, and hears them only during a journey for example. This would be contrary to the dignity of the service of worship to God. Things familiar from childhood avoid such complications, even if the individual is a non-Arab and recites in Arabic the required formulae.

(vii) One cannot neglect the psychological aspect of human beings who have at times petty prejudices of xenophobia. Occasions would arise daily when political (national) or even personal and individual frictions would induce, for instance, an Englishman not to participate in the salaat led in French or Russian or some other language. Arabic, as the language of the Qur'an and the Hadith, has a respect and a halo in the minds of every Muslim, and one employs it not as the language of the Arabs but as the language of the Prophet Muhammad, the language of the mothers-of-the-faithful, the language God Himself has chosen for revealing His latest Word for us.

(viii) The needs of unity among the co-religionists can never be too much stressed upon. One should create new links to strengthen their ties of fraternity, rather than destroy those that already exist.

(ix) One may also cite the example of international congresses and meetings. When, for instance, one attends the United Organization session, one cannot select the medium of expression according to one's whims and fancies, which would be contrary to the object of the meeting, and one would fail to reach others attending the session; one is obliged to employ himself or get his speech translated into the officially recognized languages, which are for all practical purposes either English or French, and nobody objects to this state of affairs. In the general interest, one has to sacrifice the particular interest, on pain of losing in the long run, even the particular interest.

(x) There is another aspect of the question which is no less important. In fact no translation ever replaces the original. There are for instance, nowadays numerous translations of the Holy Qur'an in English (as also in practically every language of the world), yet every now and then there are new and unceasing attempts to produce another translation, thinking that the older ones are partly defective. This is true not only of English but of every language of the world, and true also of the translation of any and every work. Should one utilize a defective thing or the perfect one, the translation or the original?

(xi) Let us recall in this connection that practically no religion, excepting Islam, possesses today integrally the original of the Revelation on which it is based, the original teaching of its founder: It is the translation, or at best fragments, of which dispose the Christian, Jewish, Parsi and other communities. How fortunate the Muslims are that they form an exception, and possess integrally the original text of the Revelation, the Holy Qur'an!

(xii) What is more, the Qur'an, although in prose, possesses all the qualities and charms of poetry, such as rhythm, resonance, grandeur of style, etc., so much so that the omission or addition of even a single letter in the text disturbs it as much as it would disturb the hemistitch of

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

a verse. Some time ago, it happened to the present writer that a Muslim French convert, who is a musician by profession, one day assured me that in chapter 110 of the Qur'an some passage seemed to have been lost, for it reads '*fi dinillahi afwaja. Fasabbih* . . . ' , which is musically impossible. My scant knowledge of the art of reciting the Qur'an came to my aid and I replied: "No, the correct reading of the passage is: '*fi dinil-lahi afwjan-v-fasabbih* . . .' (the *n* and *f* getting assimilated, so after *n*, there is a slight *v*, before pronouncing *f* of *fasabbih.*" Thereupon the musician and well-meaning brother exclaimed at once: "I renew my faith; with your explanation there remains nothing objectionable from the musical point of view, and no passage seems to be lacking." The prose of the Qur'an is as much measured as the lines of a poem. And if this is so, who would desire to replace something perfect and splendid by something comparatively mediocre!

(xiii) One should not lose sight of the fact that in the entire *salaat* there are very few passages to recite. There is first the *adhan* and *iqamah* (call to prayer). Then inside the service of worship there is the formulae *Allahu-Akbar*, *subhana rabbiyal-'azim, subhana rabby-ala*, the short chapter *al-Fatiha*, two other short chapters, and the prayer of *tashahhud*, and that is all. The totality does not exceed a page of small size, and most of the words of these texts are commonly understood by the Muslim masses and have penetrated into all the languages of the Muslim countries, so much so that even a child or a beginner learns their meaning without pain and without strain. And once the significance of these formulae is learnt, the *salaat* of a Muslim remains no more a mechanical recitation without understanding.

(xiv) Personally, this writer thinks that no Muslim would ever bestow the same respect on a translation of the Qur'an as he does on the original revealed by God to His messenger. For the translation would be done by an ordinary human being and not by an infallible person who should be protected by God against error, as is the case of a Prophet.

(xv) There is an aspect of Arabic language which merits to be brought into relief here. Apart from its incomparable musical qualities, recognized on all hands, the Arabic language itself, in its literary form, has changed since at least 1500 years neither in grammar, nor vocabulary, nor spelling, nor even pronunciation. Those who understand the language of Arabic newspapers and radio broadcasts today understand as perfectly the language of the Holy Qur'an. For a religion brought by the last of the Messengers of God and the Seal of the prophets, and also destined for all times till the end of the world, is it not providential that the language selected for this Message should also be otherwise stable and unchanging? Otherwise God in His unlimited mercy would uselessly be obliged to repeat the same Message to a new prophet in a new book comprehensible to the living men.

(xvi) One day a young student kept insisting on the importance of understanding what one says (or prays). When all other argument seemed to fail to convince him, the author ironically said: "If you promise me that you will perform regularly the five daily services in your mother-tongue, I authorize you to do so." Forthwith he interrupted the discussion, and never came again to speak of it. In other words, those who insist on regionalizing the faith and cult are those who do not practise it themselves: at least, such is the case with the immense majority of them. A believer has no need to take counsel with those who do not believe in or do not practise Islam.

(xvii) To end, there are writers who say that they have the backing of such authorities as the Imam Abu Hanifah (d. 767 C.E.) to say that the recitation of the translation of the Qur'an in the service of worship is permitted. But this is only a half-truth. These writers omit to mention that the Imam Abu Hanifah, although he had this opinion in the beginning changed it later on (as we

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

find express precision of it in the authoritative manuals of law such as the *Hidayah of al-Marghinani,* the *ad-Durr* al-Mukhtar of al-Haskafi, etc.), and that he rallied to the general opinion that in normal cases only the Arabic text is to be employed in the services of worship. Of course, there are provisions for exceptional cases, such as the needs of a new convert: immediately on his embracing Islam, he has to commence to perform the five daily services in which it is necessary to recite by heart the prescribed formulae. Until such time as he learns these formulae by heart, he may use their sense in any other language he can. For this we have the very high precedent of Salman al-Farisi, who sent the translation of *al-Fatiha* to some Persian converts, with the authorization of the Prophet Muhammad himself and they used it until their tongue got familiarized with the Arabic text. So, for some hours or some days, the new converts may use validly the translation.

(xviii) One will see that there are advantages and disadvantages, both in the use of a foreign language in one's service of worship. This is also the case with regard to the use of a regional language (*viz.* mother-tongue) for this purpose by members of a universal religion. In such cases one makes one's choice by weighing the advantages against the disadvantages, and one sees where lies the lesser of the two evils.

Why a Purely Lunar Calendar?

576. As it is well-known, Islam follows for liturgical or religious purposes, a purely lunar calendar in which, for instance, the month of Ramadan with its fasts, and of *Dhul-Hijjah* with its pilgrimage rotate from season to season. In pre-Islamic Arabia intercalation was known and it was the Holy Prophet who abolished it after long and mature thinking, let us say during his last pilgrimage, just three months before his death, when he received a revelation (Qur'an 9:37) condemning intercalation.[(4)] This intrigues the uninitiated, and shocks those who suffer from an inferiority complex and want always to imitate others blindly. Of the many utilities of this Islamic reform, there may be brought into relief:

(a) As far as the fast is concerned, it is very useful, since it provides one with the possibility of getting accustomed to food and drink privations in all seasons neither always hardship, nor is it always easy-going.

(b) Islam being destined for the whole world, the difference between the different climates had also to be taken into consideration. Had fasting been prescribed in a given month of the solar calendar, that is to say in a certain definite season, the purpose would be vitiated by nature - and physically it would be impossible. In fact the summer of the Northern Hemisphere, of the countries situated North of the equator coincides with the winter in the Southern hemisphere, in countries South of the equator. It may also be that the winter is considered as a pleasant time in equatorial regions, and a horror in the sub-polar ones. This discrimination among the Faithful of the different countries is easily avoided when the lunar calendar is followed. All will have all seasons turn by turn.

(c) The paying of the *zakat* on savings, commerce etc. - excluding agricultural products - is increased umperceptably in a way that in every 33 solar years there will be 34 lunar years, and will pay in 3 3 solar years 34 annual taxes. Even after payment of salaries according to the lunar calender, the savings of the government will be considerable, and will be available for its nation-building activities, for the benefit of the poorer classes in particular.

Conclusion

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture

Mega Lecture

For Live Classes, Recorded Lectures, Notes & Past Papers visit:
www.megalecture.com

576/a. We pray to God that this humble effort should serve its purpose of enlightening those who want to know the elements of Islam. For greater detail, there are exhaustive and specialized books, learned persons, and institutions such as al-Azhar in Egypt, Zaitunah in Tunis, Qarawiyeen in Fez (Morocco), and others in India, Pakistan, Indonesia, etc.

Mega Lecture

+92 336 7801123
https://www.youtube.com/MegaLecture